

THE
DISCIPLESHIP EVANGELISM
PROGRAM

LEVEL 2

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

I want to thank the Charis Bible College graduating class of 1999 for helping to produce this material to make discipleship available to everyone. My deep appreciation goes to Andrew Wommack for his vision of equipping the Saints. A special thanks goes to Dr. Loran Lewis who has helped me learn to disciple others by asking questions. I want to thank Arnold Hoffman for his continued support and encouragement of this project. I want to thank my fellow laborers in Christ, Rocky Forry, Joe Rose, Steve Klepatz, Gene Hall, Janette Light, and Danika Gravelle who have taken this material and proven it to work through a hands-on ministry in the field. I want to thank Richard and Betsy Shepherd for their insight and counsel throughout this project. I want to thank Satoshi Yamamoto for lending his artistic talents to our design. I want to thank my wife, Wendy, for believing in the work that we are doing. I want to give a special, special thanks to Doris Stoll for picking up the mantle; without her help this project would have never been completed in a timely fashion. I want to thank all of you who are not mentioned by name, but who have contributed to this project. May your eternal rewards be great.

Don Krow

THE DISCIPLESHIP EVANGELISM PROGRAM

TEACHERS

ANDREW WOMMACK

Since founding Andrew Wommack Ministries, Inc. in 1978, Andrew has continued to present great truths from God's Word with simplicity and clarity, through the revelation knowledge and anointing given to him from the Lord. Wherever he travels, his powerful emphasis on the Word of God continues to set people free from sin and self-righteousness, with signs and wonders following. Andrew was a pastor of three churches, and he continues to fulfill God's calling on his life by teaching the body of Christ the "good news" of our relationship in Jesus Christ.

DON KROW

Don joined Andrew in ministry in 1975. He ministered in New Mexico, Texas, and Oklahoma before coming on staff full-time in 1988 as an Associate Minister of Andrew Wommack Ministries. In 1994 he became an instructor at Charis Bible College in Colorado Springs, Colorado. The last ten years Don has spent in weekly evangelism outreaches. The Discipleship Evangelism Program was developed after five years of outreaches to help others in reaching out and discipling those turning to Christ. Don spends much time sharing with local churches and others his concept of discipleship that has been proven to work.

USING THE DISCIPLESHIP EVANGELISM PROGRAM

The Discipleship Evangelism Program is a 48-lesson discipleship tool that was developed out of a five-year weekly effort to reach the lost. It has been proven to work and is user-friendly. It supplies the necessary tools for anyone with the desire to disciple another person. It can be effectively used in cell groups, Bible studies, reaching the lost, Sunday school, new believers class, mid-week church services, altar call follow-up, evangelistic crusade follow-up, outreaches in the mission field, prison ministries, Bible schools, and to develop church growth as well as to disciple your neighbors and friends.

There are three levels to this program:

Level 1 is designed to explain the biblical truths of Christ and Him crucified—to bring a person into an understanding of God’s great love for them that was displayed at the cross. Level 1 brings a person into repentance, the new birth, the baptism of the Holy Spirit, and water baptism. All of this is done without preaching at a person but by asking them questions to bring them to the Bible for the answers. This program is designed to assist people in understanding the Bible for themselves.

Level 2 contains foundational truths of Scripture such as renewing the mind, how to meditate on God’s Word, the importance of the local church, the authority of the believer, God’s plan for marriage, God’s kind of love, and many more.

Level 3 is designed to assist a person in learning to disciple others. It contains a Training Program that will help a person discover the how-tos of discipling others. It may be used for a training class in their local church and in discovering how to reach and disciple the lost. This level is designed to bring the “disciplee” to the place of becoming a “discipler.” What has been learned from a hands-on ministry of reaching others will be taught at this level.

It is our desire to supply as many discipling tools as possible to assist one in reaching out and discipling others. In a normal local church, a congregation of 200 may only have five to ten people with teaching gifts in that entire congregation. As a result, five or ten people may reach out to disciple, but the majority of the people become benchwarmers in our local congregations. As a result of this need, we are supplying discipleship tools for various individuals who do not necessarily have teaching gifts. On any mechanical job, to effectively get the job done, you must have a screwdriver, a crescent wrench, a voltage meter, a pair of pliers, and other tools to make sure you are able to accomplish the task. Each part of the discipleship program is designed to be one tool. No one tool is better than the others, so it is our goal to supply as many tools so a majority of the body of Christ can reach out, evangelize, disciple, and teach others.

The following is a list of the tools we provide and how each tool fits into the program:

Introducing the Subject: Each subject for study is being introduced by Andrew Wommack or Don Krow. These few pages are to be read out loud to the person or persons being disciplined. A discussion may follow. Continue by asking the questions from the Teacher's Guide or Detailed Teacher's Guide.

Outlines: Discipleship Evangelism outlines are meant to be copied on a copy machine and distributed to each individual that you are discipling. They are to be handed out prior to playing the accompanying lesson in the audio or video version. These outlines supply a structure of the material that either Andrew Wommack or Don Krow is teaching. By supplying this outline, the person being disciplined can look at the Scriptures and the main points that these lessons are bringing out as they listen to the lessons the CDs or are watching the DVD version.

Teacher's Guide: The Teacher's Guide is a list of questions that will create a dialog between the teacher and the person being disciplined. They are questions that will assist people in discovering for themselves what the Bible is really saying. These questions will create a dialog of about 45 minutes between the teacher and the people you are discipling. We find that the Teacher's Guide is used most effectively with individuals who the scriptures declare are "apt to teach" (1 Timothy 3:2).

On a few of our Teacher's Guides we have supplied an Optional Teacher's Guide. This will allow the person teaching to choose the course of questions to ask. For instance, we realize that there is a great diversity of understanding concerning the subject of water baptism. By supplying the Optional Teacher's Guide, the person teaching is allowed to ask questions that may be more appropriate for the given situation. Let me restate that only a few lessons supply an Optional Teacher's Guide.

An Optional Teacher's Guide may also be supplied by using the questions from the Detailed Teacher's Guide in the same manner as you would use the regular Teacher's Guide. This will give you more options and questions to ask.

Detailed Teacher's Guide: The Detailed Teacher's Guide was developed to help people teach who do not have strong teaching gifts. Instead of using only the five or ten people out of a congregation who have teaching gifts, the Detailed Teacher's Guide allows all the members within the body to reach out and disciple another individual. This method has been used effectively to allow every person to evangelize and disciple others. It has already been proven in over 229 nations of the world. With this approach, a person is allowed to stay on track and bring out the main points of the lesson by simply reading and asking questions. With this approach, a paragraph or section that is numbered is read out loud by the teacher or even by the person being disciplined. At this point, a corresponding question is asked and discussed. The teacher continues to read each paragraph out loud and ask the corresponding questions. A normal Detailed Teacher's Guide will create a discipleship lesson of around 45 minutes. The Detailed Teacher's Guide is an effective tool in the United States as well as in other countries where electricity is not available and DVDs, and CDs cannot be played. In these countries, a person has more quality time to spend with the person being disciplined.

Discipleship Questions and Answer Key: Each lesson has a new set of questions with an answer key developed by Danika Gravelle. This new section is currently being used in the penitentiary system of the United States. These questions allow people to study during the week to give hours of meditation in the Scriptures and to prepare for the weekly studies in the regular Discipleship Evangelism Program. An Answer Key has been provided so that you may compare your answers.

Additional Information: Some lessons contain more in the Additional Information section than others. The Additional Information is designed to be used like a Sunday school teacher's quarterly. In most Sunday schools, a regular quarterly is given to the people. A detailed teacher's quarterly is given to the teachers to supply them with additional information and examples. The Additional Information is designed to give the teacher additional information and examples that pertain to the subject or lesson being taught. In this way, if a person being disciplined asks a question that may not be in the lesson, the teacher is not thrown off by not knowing how to answer the question. Additional Information supplies the teacher with information that makes them very familiar with the subject being taught.

Trainer Video Lessons: The Trainer Video lessons are designed to assist the person that wants to teach the discipleship lessons. They are also tools that may be utilized by the leadership within the local church. As the leaders understand the principles that are contained on the Trainer Video lessons, they will be able to become trainers in their local congregations. The trainers will then be able to give additional insight into the dos and don'ts of teaching and help train those who want to utilize the discipleship lessons. We advise everyone to study the Trainer Video lessons to get the real heart and understanding of how to use this discipleship program.

DVD and CD Lessons: Each lesson is designed to be played on either a CD player, or a DVD player. Each lesson contains ten to twelve minutes of concentrated teaching on various biblical subjects. An outline is supplied to pass out to those being disciplined so they can follow along as they listen to the presentation. After the lesson is played, questions and a dialog follow that take people to the Bible to discover the answers. With this method of teaching, we help others discover for themselves what the Bible says. Our textbook is the Bible. Our prayer is that people will be helped, encouraged, and spiritually strengthened through these lessons.

If you have any questions concerning this program, write to:

Andrew Wommack Ministries
PO Box 3333
Colorado Springs, CO 80934
awmi.net
719-635-1111

DKM
10065 Sun Ridge Circle
Rogers, AR 72756
delessons.org

LEVEL 2

THE DISCIPLESHIP EVANGELISM PROGRAM

TABLE OF CONTENTS

LESSON	LEVEL 2 - TITLE OF LESSON	PAGE
1	Self Centeredness, The Source of All Grief	1
2	How to Meditate on God's Word	18
3	Renewing the Mind	35
4	Importance of Christ's Church	49
5	Deliverance	61
6	Authority of the Believer	80
7	Healing is in the Atonement	96
8	Hindrances to Healing	112
9	Forgiveness	126
10	Marriage Part 1	140
11	Marriage Part 2	152
12	God's Kind of Love Part 1	170
13	God's Kind of Love Part 2	186
14	Finances Part 1	201
15	Finances Part 2	216
16	What to Do When Your Prayers Seem Unanswered	234

SELF-CENTEREDNESS: THE SOURCE OF ALL GRIEF

Andrew Wommack

We've already discussed a lot of really important things in previous lessons. We've talked about the foundations of Christianity and God's unconditional love that is not based on our performance. We dealt with essential things like commitment and receiving the baptism of the Holy Ghost. In Level 2 we want to talk about how to apply these truths to everyday life. If God has already put His life inside you, and all these things are there, how do you release them? One of the things we'll talk about is that everything is already there for you. It's a matter of getting rid of the things that hinder the flow of God rather than trying to get God to give you more.

You've already received everything, and now it's a matter of releasing it. One of the most important things in releasing God's power is to understand that it is our own self-centeredness that is the source of grief in our lives. Many of our problems are self-induced. I know that is offensive to people when they first hear it, but let me share some things with you from John 14. Jesus was talking to His disciples the night before His crucifixion—just hours before they were to see Him crucified. This was a traumatic event. These people had given up everything. They had left their businesses and their families, and every goal, every hope they ever had was pinned on Jesus.

In the midst of this, He begins John 14:1 by saying, "Let not your heart be troubled; ye believe in God, believe also in me." This seems like an unreasonable request, and many people today would say, "But if you were one of Jesus' disciples and were to see Him crucified, how could you keep from being troubled and broken-hearted through that?" People who are into psychology would say you are in denial if you try to suppress these feelings and emotions, yet Jesus told His disciples not to let their hearts be troubled. He said, "You have the power; you let not your heart be troubled."

One of the keys to this is found in John 14:28. He was speaking to His disciples on that same night before His crucifixion, and He said, "Ye have heard how I said unto you, I go away, and come again unto you. If ye loved me, ye would rejoice, because I said, I go unto the Father: for my Father is greater than I." It would take more time than I have to teach this fully, but this is saying that if these disciples loved Jesus more than they loved themselves, they wouldn't have been grief-stricken to see the crucifixion . . . they wouldn't have been in turmoil . . . their hearts wouldn't have been troubled. Really, the source of their grief was self-centeredness.

If you think about it, had they been more concerned about Jesus, had they loved Him more than they loved themselves, their reaction at seeing Him crucified would have been different. Certainly they wouldn't have enjoyed it. It still would have been a tragic event, but He had just told them in the previous verses that He was going to His Father. If they had really loved Him, they could have said, "Well, at least Jesus is finally rid of all this rejection, shame, and ridicule that He's been unjustly subjected to." They could have seen that now He was in the presence of God. If ever there was a righteous man, it was Jesus, and He was going to be rewarded and comforted. If their whole hearts were focused on Jesus, they could have found joy and peace even between the time of His crucifixion and resurrection.

The thing that really hurt was that they were thinking only about themselves: “What about me? If Jesus has been crucified, they’re going to be coming after me next; it could be my own life. What about my future? I’ve identified myself with this man and followed Him, and now it looks like He has failed.” It was really their self-centeredness that was the source of their grief. Without going into a long explanation, if you just think about it, self-centeredness is what causes grief in our lives. When someone we love dies, if they knew the Lord, we grieve, but if we stop and think about it, they are in the presence of God. God Himself is ministering to them, and they’re able to see Him. They have all the restrictions and limitations of this life removed. They are experiencing joy, something we should actually be envious of if we were thinking properly, but do you know why most people grieve? They’re thinking, “What’s my life going to be like without them? What’s it going to be like not to have them around?”

Self-centeredness is the source of so much of what we experience. There is a verse in Proverbs 13 you really ought to look up because you won’t believe it if you don’t read it in your own Bible: Verse 10 says, “Only by pride cometh contention: but with the well advised is wisdom.” Many people at first would take issue with that and say, “Wait a minute. Pride can’t be the only thing that causes contention or strife. Proverbs 17:14 says that contention is the beginning of strife, so strife has to be caused by more than just pride. It’s what this person has done to me.” Others will say, “You don’t understand; this is just the type of person I am.” No, the scripture says only by pride comes contention. It’s not one of the leading causes; it’s the only cause. Some people again would take issue and say, “I’ve got all kinds of problems, but pride isn’t one of them; if anything, I’ve got such low self-esteem there’s no way anybody can accuse me of pride.”

We have to redefine what pride is. It’s not just thinking you’re better than somebody else, but in the simplest terms it is seeing yourself as the center of everything. Self-centeredness is really the root of all pride. In Numbers 12:2 Miriam and Aaron, Moses’ sister and brother, came against him, criticizing him because of an interracial marriage, saying, “Hath the Lord indeed spoken only to Moses? Hath he not spoken also by us?” The Scripture then says in parentheses in verse 3 that Moses was the meekest man on the face of the earth. Instead of taking offense at what they said, he began to pray and intercede for them.

When it says Moses was the meekest man on the face of the earth, stop and think about that. We don’t know how many people there were on earth, but surely there were millions, and Moses was the meekest man of all these people. What makes this a really amazing statement is that he was the one who wrote it. Most people think if you’re truly humble or meek, you won’t even know it. That’s a false impression of what arrogance really is. Pride isn’t just thinking you’re better than everybody else . . . it’s self-centeredness. It’s like having a stick with arrogance on one side and low self-esteem on the other side. Those are opposite expressions of the same thing, but they’re both on the same stick. It’s self-centeredness. It doesn’t matter if you think you’re better than everyone else or worse than everyone else, you’re absolutely self-centered. Everything gets filtered through that. A timid, shy person is very proud and self-centered, thinking only about self.

The point I'm making is that self-centeredness is really the root of all pride, and if you plug that back into Proverbs 13:10, "only by pride cometh contention," what this says is that it is our own self-centeredness that makes us angry not what people do to us. It's our self-centeredness that causes us to react to what people do. You will never be able to stop people from rubbing you the wrong way; it can't happen. Faith is not to control other people but to help you deal with yourself, and deal with the things that are inside you . . . so it doesn't matter what people do to you.

As Jesus was being crucified, He was able to turn to the very people who were crucifying Him and say, "Father forgive them, for they know not what they do." He didn't control those people but instead had control over Himself. It's self-centeredness that makes us angry. Jesus didn't come here for Himself, but He so loved the world that He came here for us. He thought of His mother as He hung on the cross and spoke to one of His disciples about taking care of her. The reason Jesus was able to forgive and operate in love—in the midst of intense agony, injustice, and everything that came his way—was because He was not self-centered.

It's our own selfishness that makes us angry, yet the Scripture says we're supposed to be dead to ourselves. If I had a corpse in front of me, I could insult it, kick it, spit on it, or ignore it, but if it's truly a corpse, it wouldn't respond. The reason you respond the way you do to the things around you is not because of those external things but because of what's on the inside of you. You will never be so strong in faith that you can remove all obstacles and everything that rubs you the wrong way, but you can deal with yourself. You can come to a place where you make Jesus Lord of your life and love Him, His kingdom, and other people more than you love yourself. You'll find that when you do that and deal with self that the strife and contention in your life will cease.

One of the great keys for applying all of these things God has done in your life is to realize that He didn't give you the kingdom for selfish purposes. He didn't do these things just so you could have every need supplied. You need to learn it's in denying yourself and losing your life that you really begin to find out what life is all about. It's in loving other people and God more than yourself that you'll begin to defuse your anger and hurt, all those things that are inside you.

I pray that today God will take these few things I've said and use them to open your heart to realize that it's our own self-centeredness that causes us grief. Instead of placing the blame somewhere else, we need to accept the responsibility, face it, humble ourselves before God, and ask Him to come in and make Himself big in our lives. That's the way for you to walk in victory.

SELF-CENTEREDNESS: THE SOURCE OF ALL GRIEF (Outline)

One of the most important things in releasing the power of God inside you is to understand that your own self-centeredness can hinder the flow of God.

John 14:1: "Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me."
John 14:28: "Ye have heard how I said unto you, I go away, and come again unto you. If ye loved me, ye would rejoice, because I said, I go unto the Father: for my Father is greater than I."

If the disciples loved Jesus more than they loved themselves, they wouldn't have been grief-stricken by the crucifixion, and their hearts would not have been troubled.

Proverbs 13:10: "Only by pride cometh contention: but with the well advised is wisdom."
Pride, in its simplest terms, is seeing yourself as the center of everything, whether it is thinking you are better than everyone else or worse than everyone else.

Your self-centeredness is what makes you angry and causes you to react to what people do. You cannot control what other people do, but you can use your faith to deal with the things that are on the inside of you so it doesn't matter what other people do to you.

Jesus did not come to this earth for Himself - He came for us.

The reason Jesus was able to forgive and operate in love while He was on the cross was because He was not self-centered.

Scripture says you are to be dead unto yourself. One of the great keys in applying the things God has done in your life is to realize that God did not give you the kingdom for selfish purposes. It is in denying yourself that you truly find out what life is all about. In loving God and other people more than you love yourself, you will begin to diffuse the anger and hurt on the inside of you and walk in victory.

SELF-CENTEREDNESS: THE SOURCE OF ALL GRIEF (Teacher's Guide)

1.
 - A. What were the disciples arguing about on the road going to Capernaum?
Read Mark 9:33-34.

They argued about who was the greatest.
 - B. Does this reflect the selfishness in all of us?
 - C. According to Mark 9:35, if someone wants to be first he must become what?

Servant of all.
2. Explain in detail Jesus' teaching in Luke 22:24-27.
3. According to Proverbs 13:10, what is the only thing that causes contention?

Pride.
4. According to Galatians 2:20, how should we live our lives?

By the faith of Christ and not centered on our own strengths or weaknesses.
5. What is the antidote for self-centeredness according to Matthew 7:12?

Whatever you would want someone to do to you, do to them.

SELF-CENTEREDNESS: THE SOURCE OF ALL GRIEF (Detailed Teacher's Guide)

Note: The following information may be read out loud (a numbered section at a time) with the person(s) being disciplined. After each numbered section is read, pause and ask the question(s) that correspond to the paragraph(s), and then discuss them.

¹ Let's look at Proverbs 13:10: "Only by pride cometh contention: but with the well advised is wisdom." Many people would take issue with this and say, "Now wait a minute—pride can't be the only thing that causes contention or strife. In Proverbs 17:14, it says that contention is the beginning of strife. So, strife has to be caused by more than just pride. It's what this person has done to me." Some people would say, "It's my personality type—you don't understand—this is just the type of person I am." No, the scripture says ONLY by pride cometh contention. It's not one of the leading causes - it's the only cause. Some people would disagree again and say, "Now wait a minute—I have all kinds of problems, but pride isn't one of them. If anything, I have such low self-esteem that there is no way anybody could accuse me of pride."

² You have to redefine what pride is. Actually, pride is not just thinking you're better than somebody else, but pride (in its simplest terms) is seeing yourself as the center of everything. It's self-centeredness—the root of all pride.

¹According to Proverbs 13:10, how does contention start?

²Complete this sentence: Pride is seeing yourself as the center of everything.

³In Numbers 12:2 there is an instance where Miriam and Aaron come against Moses. They are Moses' brother and sister. They come against him because of an inter-racial marriage. They criticized him saying, "Are you the only one that God has spoken by?" And the scripture says in parenthesis that Moses was the meekest man on the face of the earth. He fell on his face, and instead of taking offense to what they said about him, he began to pray for them and intercede for them. When it says in parenthesis that Moses was the meekest man on the face of the earth, stop and think about what this means. That's an amazing statement. We don't know how many people were on the earth, but certainly there were millions of people. Moses was the meekest man out of all those people, and the thing that makes it really amazing is that Moses is the one who wrote that.

You know, most people think that if you are truly humble or meek, you won't even know it. That's a false impression of what arrogance is. Pride is not just thinking you are better than everybody else, but it's self-centeredness. It's like a stick with two ends—on one end is arrogance, and on the other end is low self-esteem. They are just two opposite expressions of the same thing—it's all on the same stick—it's self-centeredness. It doesn't matter if you think you are better than everybody else or if you think you are worse than everybody else. If you think this way, you are self-centered, and everything gets filtered through that.

⁴A timid or shy person is a very proud person—self-centered—thinking only about himself. So, the point I am making is that self-centeredness is really the root of all pride. If you will plug that back in to Proverbs 13:10, "Only by pride cometh contention," then what this is saying is that it's our own self-centeredness that makes us angry—it's not what people do to us that makes us angry—it's our self-centeredness that causes us to react to what people do. You are never going to be able to stop every person from rubbing you the wrong way; that can't happen. That's not what faith is for—to control other people. Faith is so that you can deal with yourself—so you can deal with the things that are on the inside of you so it doesn't matter what other people do to you.

³Pride is self-centeredness.

⁴When we are self-centered, it is easy for us to become angry.

⁵ Jesus, as He was being crucified, was able to turn to the very people who were crucifying Him and say, “Father forgive them, for they know not what they do.” He didn’t control those people. Instead, He had control over Himself. It’s self-centeredness that makes us angry. Jesus did not come to this earth for Himself, but He so loved the world that He came here for us. He turned around and forgave the very people crucifying Him. He thought of His mother as He was hanging on the cross and spoke to one of the disciples about taking care of her. The reason Jesus was able to forgive and operate in love (even in the midst of intense agony, injustice, and everything that came His way) was because He was not self-centered.

It’s our own selfishness that really makes us angry, yet the Scripture says that we are supposed to be “dead unto ourselves.” If I had a corpse lying in front of me today, I could insult the corpse, I could kick the corpse, I could spit on the corpse, or I could ignore the corpse. If it’s truly a corpse, it’s not going to respond. The reason that you respond the way you do to the things around you is because of what’s on the inside of you. You are never going to be able to control everything externally. You are never going to get so strong in faith that you can remove all obstacles and everything that rubs you the wrong way. But you can deal with yourself.

You can come to a place where you make Jesus Lord over your life and you love Him, love His kingdom, and love other people more than you love yourself. You will find that when you do that and you deal with self, that this strife—this contention—will cease in your life.

⁵(a) According to Mark 10:44, what did Jesus say the mark of becoming great was?
(b) What should be our rule of life according to Matthew 7:12?
(c) What can we learn from 1 John 3:16-18?

SELF-CENTEREDNESS: THE SOURCE OF ALL GRIEF
(Discipleship Questions)

Read Mark 9:33-35

1. What was the dispute the disciples were having while on the road?
2. Why do you think they were silent when Jesus asked them the question?
3. "If anyone desires to be _____, he shall be _____ of all, and _____ of all."

Definition Serve: to minister, to wait upon, to attend to.

Read John 13:5-17

4. What was Jesus doing for the disciples (v5)?
5. Did Peter want Jesus to wash his feet at first?
6. In verse 13, what two titles did the disciples call Jesus?
A. _____
B. _____
7. Since Christ washed our feet, what must we also do for one another?
8. According to verse 15, what is the example that Christ showed us?
9. Is a servant greater than his master?
10. According to verse 17, what are you if you know and do these things?

Read Luke 22:24-27

11. What did the kings of the Gentiles exercise over them?
12. Was this action to be the same among the disciples?
13. What does it say the greatest among you should be?
14. What does it say about the one who governs?
15. Christ said in verse 27 that the one who sits at the table is the greater, BUT...what did Christ say about Himself?
16. If Jesus is the greatest among us, and yet serves us, how is it we should be toward our fellow brethren?

Read Philippians 2:5-8

17. Did Jesus consider it robbery to consider Himself equal to God?
18. What did Jesus “make” Himself?
19. What did He take the form of?
20. What did He come into the likeness of?
21. What was He found in the appearance of?
22. What two things did He do in the middle of verse 8?
 - A. _____
 - B. _____
23. If Jesus, who considered Himself equal with God humbled Himself before God and us, is it fair to say that we, who are not equal with God, should also humble ourselves before one another?

Read Galatians 6:2

24. What are we to do with one another’s burdens?

Bear: to support, to take up, to carry, to endure, to have compassion

Read Galatians 6:3

25. “For if anyone thinks himself to be _____, when he is _____, he _____ himself.”

Read James 1:26

26. Who is James talking about in this verse?
27. If the religious don’t bridle their _____, what does he deceive?
28. What becomes useless?

Definition

Pride: boasting, vain glory, haughtiness, puffed up, high-minded, appearing above others, superior in attitude.

Read Proverbs 13:10

- 29. What is the only thing that causes contention, or strife?
- 30. What comes with being well advised?

Read Proverbs 16:18

- 31. What comes before destruction?
- 32. What comes before a fall?

Read Proverbs 21:4

- 33. What three things are considered sin in this verse?
 - A. _____
 - B. _____
 - C. _____

Read Proverbs 28:25

- 34. What stirs up strife?
- 35. What happens to those who trust in the Lord?

Read Galatians 2:20

- 36. Since "I" have been crucified with Christ, do "I" still live?
- 37. Who now lives in me?
- 38. How do I live my life now?
- 39. Does Christ love you?
- 40. Did Christ give Himself for you?

Read Galatians 6:10

- 41. What are we to do when we have opportunity?
- 42. We are to do good toward _____, but especially toward whom?

Read Matthew 7:12

43. What is the antidote for self-centeredness?

Read 1 John 3:16-18

44. How is it that we know love?

45. What must we also do with our lives?

46. Does the love of God abide in someone who sees a brother in need and ignores him?

47. How are we not to love? _____ or _____

48. How are we to love? _____ and _____

Marriage is a selfless union between a man and a woman.

Read Ephesians 5:22

49. How are wives to submit to their husbands?

Read Ephesians 5:28

50. How is a husband to love his wife?

51. Can you see from these two verses in Ephesians that if we put each other first, it is pleasing to the Lord, and our relationships are stronger and more peaceful?

52. In your own experience, when is it you get angry or upset?

- A. When you don't get your own way
- B. When somebody doesn't do as you want them to?
- C. When you feel cheated
- D. All of the above

53. Do you recognize that when we put ourselves first above others that is selfishness?

54. Again, if we want to be first, we must be

SELF-CENTEREDNESS: THE SOURCE OF ALL GRIEF
(Discipleship Answer Key)

1. Who would be the greatest among them
2. Embarrassment
3. First – last – servant
4. Washing their feet
5. No
6. A. Teacher
B. Lord
7. Serve one another
8. To do as Christ has done
9. No
10. Blessed
11. Lordship
12. No
13. Be as the younger
14. He should serve
15. He also serves
16. Servants
17. No
18. Of no reputation
19. A bondservant
20. Men
21. A man
22. A. Humbled Himself
B. Became obedient
23. Yes
24. Bear them
25. Something – nothing – deceives
26. Believers
27. Tongue – His own heart
28. His religion
29. Pride
30. Wisdom
31. Pride
32. A haughty spirit
33. A. Haughty Look
B. Proud heart
C. Plowing of the wicked
34. A proud heart
35. Prosperity
36. No
37. Christ
38. By faith
39. Yes
40. Yes
41. Do good

42. All – the household of faith
43. Be giving and serve others
44. Christ gave His life for us
45. Give our lives for our brethren
46. No
47. In word or tongue
48. In deed and truth
49. As to the Lord
50. As their own bodies
51. Yes
52. D. All of the above
53. Yes
54. Last

SELF-CENTEREDNESS, THE SOURCE OF ALL GRIEF (Additional Material)

Romans 12:10: “Be kindly affectioned one to another with brotherly love; in honour preferring one another.”

(Romans 12:10) The dictionary defines “preferring” as “to choose as more desirable; like better.” That means this verse is admonishing us to desire the welfare of others more than our own, to like others better than ourselves. That is an awesome command that is only obtainable through God’s supernatural love.

If this simple yet profound truth could be understood and applied, then strife would cease (Proverbs 17:14), the world would see Christianity as never before, and we would discover the true joy that comes from serving someone besides ourselves (Matthew 10:39; 16:25).

Romans 12:15: “Rejoice with them that do rejoice, and weep with them that weep.”

(Romans 12:15) A self-centered person will not rejoice at someone else’s prosperity; he will be jealous instead. Likewise, a selfish person will not weep with those that weep because he really doesn’t care about anyone but himself. The Lord is continuing the thought about preferring one another.

Philippians 2:3-4: “Let nothing be done through strife or vainglory; but in lowliness of mind let each esteem other better than themselves. Look not every man on his own things, but every man also on the things of others.”

(Philippians 2:3) Humility can be defined in many ways, one of which is “absence of pride” (Webster’s New World Dictionary). Typically, pride is described as arrogance. However, that is just one dimension of pride. Timidness is also pride, because in its simplest terms, pride is self-centeredness, and a timid or shy person is very self-centered. Paul gives the antidote to self-centeredness in this verse—esteeming others better than ourselves.

How can we esteem others better than ourselves when, in truth, we really think we are better than others? Some people are better athletes than others; some are better businessmen than others; some are better speakers than others, and so forth.

First, we need to recognize that our accomplishments don’t make us better than others. There is a difference between what we do and who we are. Better performance does not make a better person. A person’s character can be severely wanting even though his performance is good. A classic example of this is found in the Pharisees of Jesus’ day. They did the right things for all the wrong reasons. Inside they were corrupt. Our evaluation of others needs to change. God judges by looking on the inside not the outside. We need to esteem others on the same basis.

Second, to esteem someone better than ourselves simply means to value him or her more than we value ourselves. To some that may seem impossible, but it isn't. That is exactly what Jesus did, and Paul uses Jesus as the model for what he is preaching in the next few verses (vv. 5-11). If Jesus, who was God in the flesh (1 Timothy 3:16), could humble Himself and value our welfare above His own welfare, then we should certainly be able to do the same. It can happen when we die to self and live to God.

(Philippians 2:4) The way we implement the instruction of the previous verse to "esteem others better than themselves" is to look at the other person's side of things instead of seeing everything through selfish eyes. If we think only about ourselves, we will be selfish. If we get out of self and think more about the benefit of others than the benefit of self, then we will be selfless. It's a matter of focus. Whichever side of things we focus on is the side we will take. Therefore, "Look not every man on his own things, but every man also on the things of others" (Philippians 2:4).

Colossians 2:23: "Which things have indeed a show of wisdom in will worship, and humility, and neglecting of the body; not in any honour to the satisfying of the flesh."

(Colossians 2:23) The self-denial that Paul was speaking against in these verses is embraced by much of "Christianity" today. Historically, self-denial has always been a big part of false religion. Most religions of the world teach an abasement of self, but they do it as penitence in order to obtain salvation. This is not the denying of self that the Bible advocates.

True self-denial, as the Scriptures promote, is not self-hatred or masochism but rather an enthroning of Christ above self. We have a new identity in Christ that replaces the "old self." This isn't done to obtain salvation but is a love response to what Christ has already done for us. He gave His all for us, and we willingly give our all back to Him.

Self-denial, when done as an attempt to earn salvation, is always motivated by guilt and characterized by rigid rules as Paul describes. True Christianity, on the other hand, is not the observance of rituals but a relationship that produces holiness as a fruit and not a root of salvation. Holiness doesn't come from the outside and work its way inside, but when we are born again we become righteous, and we work that holiness out in our physical lives.

Trying to destroy the power of self through harsh laws actually arouses and strengthens sin. Christians must not let life become a set of rules but rather a response to a loving relationship with Jesus Christ.

1 Corinthians 6:20: "For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God's."

(1 Corinthians 6:20) One of the most damaging attitudes of our time is the exaltation of self over others. Personal rights have been promoted at the expense of others. This is not good for society, and it is certainly not the way God expects His body to operate.

As Christians we need to develop a continual awareness that our lives are not our own. We do not have the liberty to do as we please. We should present our bodies as living sacrifices unto God, recognizing that this is just our reasonable duty to the one who gave His life for us (Romans 12:1).

John 6:30: “They said therefore unto him, What sign showest thou then, that we may see, and believe thee? what dost thou work?”

(John 6:30) Jesus had already performed a great miracle before them in feeding the five thousand, but the people’s hearts were so set on themselves that they missed the true miracle. All they perceived was how good it felt to have their hunger satisfied. When we are full of self, we always miss God.

HOW TO MEDITATE ON GOD'S WORD

(lesson not available)

HOW TO MEDITATE ON GOD'S WORD (Outline)

John 6:63: "It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life."

God's Word is vibrant and carries the life and energy of God. It's supernatural.

Romans 12:2: "And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God."

We can recognize God's perfect will through the renewing of our minds.

Our souls, which are made up of the mind, intellect, emotions, and will, are transformed as they come into agreement with the Word of God.

This transformation of the soul takes place through meditating on God's Word.

Reading the Bible is not meditation, but it helps in:

1. Familiarizing ourselves with the Scriptures.
2. Giving the Holy Spirit an opportunity to breathe on or accentuate a passage of scripture.

Memorizing Scripture is also not meditation. You can quote a verse and still not have it affect your life, but prayer saturates the soul with truth.

In the Greek, "meditate" means "to mutter or to muse--to think upon or mutter to oneself, speaking under your breath." Meditating on the Word of God involves two aspects:

1. Muttering the Scriptures to yourselves. Reading a portion of Scripture over and over and getting it on the inside of your heart begins the process of meditation.
2. Musing or thinking upon a scripture.

We need to allow the Holy Spirit to speak to us through the Scriptures and paint a picture of victory for us. Through meditation, there will come a point in time when the picture from the verse will be more real in our thinking and hearts than any other pictures we've carried around on the inside of us.

Psalms 1:3: "And he shall be like a tree planted by the rivers of water, that bringeth forth his fruit in his season; his leaf also shall not wither; and whatsoever he doeth shall prosper."

The result of meditating on God's Word day and night is that we will prosper.

Our souls are created with the ability to carry around the pictures that the Scriptures have painted for us of victory on the inside of us day and night. In the same way that we can worry day and night, we can meditate on the truths and promises of God's Word.

If we want to experience the renewing of our minds and prosper in what we do, it will require us to meditate on God's Word.

HOW TO MEDITATE ON GOD'S WORD (Teacher's Guide)

1. According to John 6:63, what are Jesus' words?

They are spirit and life.

2. If we renew our minds according to Romans 12:2, what can we prove or recognize?

The good, acceptable, and perfect will of God. (You can know God's will.)

3. Meditation on God's Word isn't just reading the Bible. Meditation is not just quoting verses. Do you remember what the instructor said meditation is?

Meditation is to mutter to oneself or to think upon.

4. A. According to Psalms 1, what are the benefits of meditating in the law of the Lord?

We become like trees planted by water. We bring forth fruit in season. Our leaves won't wither. Whatever we do will prosper.

- B. How often should we do this?

Day and night.

5. What does Philippians 4:8 tell us to do?

Whatever things are just, pure, lovely, and are of good report—think on these things.

6. As we meditate upon Christ, what happens to us according to 2 Corinthians 3:18?

We are changed into His image by the Spirit of the Lord.

HOW TO MEDITATE ON GOD'S WORD (Detailed Teacher's Guide)

Note: The following information may be read out loud (a numbered section at a time) with the person(s) being disciplined. After each numbered section is read, pause and ask the question(s) that correspond to the paragraph(s), and then discuss them.

¹ The word “meditation” actually means “to mutter to oneself.” It also means “to muse, to consider, to think upon.” Biblical meditation is not the act of emptying one’s mind, but rather filling it with God’s Word.

² Meditation is not memorization; it is not recalling each specific word in the Scriptures. Meditation is first of all recognizing the picture that the Scriptures paint for us. It may be a passage that brings us a picture of peace—or a picture of healing for a sick body. Maybe it is a picture of provision. Meditation is carrying that picture of life around on the inside of us. It is exciting that our souls were created by God with the ability to carry a picture of victory around, day and night. We certainly know what it’s like to be overwhelmed with fear day and night. In the same way, our hearts and minds can be saturated with the life of God’s Word without ceasing.

³ As we meditate on the Word of God, we attack and tear down the strongholds in our thought lives. This is important because it is our thoughts that determine our actions. Your body nor your life can’t ever go in a direction that your thoughts have not previously gone.

God told Joshua that he was to meditate on His Word day and night that he might observe to do according to all that is written in it. The principle is that we do what we see in our minds. The mind has two basic functions: memory and imagination. We are created by God to perform what we first see in our minds. Every action is first preceded by a thought-picture. For example, adultery is played over in one’s mind long before the act of adultery takes place.

¹(a) Define what biblical meditation is and is not.

(b) How can a person be prosperous and have success (Joshua 1:8; Psalms 1:2-3)?

²How do people meditate on negative things? Worry and anxiety.

³What does Philippians 4:8 tell us to do?

⁴As we meditate on God’s Word, we allow the Word to paint a picture for us of strength, purity, and victory. The process of exchanging our negative thoughts with these pictures is the process of “renewing” our minds. We really don’t see with our eyes—we see with our minds. Our lives will rise and fall, depending upon the pictures we carry around on the inside of us.

When Joshua meditated on God’s promises, he began to see himself performing and experiencing those promises, consequently making them a reality with his actions.

⁴As we meditate upon Christ, what happens to us according to 2 Corinthians 3:18?

How to Meditate on God's Word (Discipleship Questions)

Definition

Meditate: to mutter, to muse, to think upon, to speak under one's breath, to mull or repeat over and over, to occupy your thoughts with, to form a picture in your mind of something through repetition so that it will change your life.

Read John 6:63

1. Who is it that gives life?
2. What does the flesh profit?
3. What two things are the words that Jesus speaks to us? _____ and _____

Read Romans 12:2

4. What are we not to be conformed to?
5. How are we to be transformed?
6. What are we to prove by the renewing our minds?
 - A. _____
 - B. _____
 - C. _____ will of God.

Review the definition at the top of the page.

7. Is meditating emptying our minds of thoughts? _____
8. Is meditating merely reading something? _____

Read Psalm 1:1-3

9. Blessed is the man who does not do what three things?
 - A. _____
 - B. _____
 - C. _____
10. What is his delight in instead?
11. How often does he meditate on the Law?
12. What shall he be like, who meditates on God's Word day and night?
13. What does this tree bring forth in its season?

14. Shall his leaf wither?
15. What is the outcome of whatever he does?

Read Philippians 4:8-9

16. List all eight things we are to meditate on.
- A. _____
 - B. _____
 - C. _____
 - D. _____
 - E. _____
 - F. _____
 - G. _____
 - H. _____
17. In verse 9 there are four things we must do, list them.
- I. _____
 - J. _____
 - K. _____
 - L. _____
18. What will happen as a result of doing these things?

Read Joshua 1:8-9

19. What shall we do with the Book of the Law?
20. Why are we to meditate on it day and night?
21. If we do all that is written, how will our lives be?
22. What four things did God command us and reminds us of in verse 9?
- A. _____
 - B. _____
 - C. _____
 - D. _____
23. We can be all of these things because

Read Proverbs 23:7a

24. Write out this verse:

- 25. If we haven't renewed our minds as in Romans 12:2, and we believe the lies we have toward ourselves—loser, ugly, poor, guilty—who does this verse in Proverbs say we are?
- 26. Can you see how meditating on God's Word and believing who He says we are could change your perspective on who you think you are?

Read Psalm 119:11

- 27. Why did David hide God's Word in his heart?

Read Psalm 119:15-16

- 28. "I will _____ on Your precepts (commandments, ways)"
 And _____ Your ways.
 I will _____ myself in Your statutes;
 I will NOT _____ Your _____."
- 29. Can you see how by meditating, contemplating, and delighting yourself in God's Word will cause you not to forget what you have learned?

Read Psalm 119:78-80

- 30. Who is to be ashamed?
- 31. What are you to do in order to remain blameless and unashamed?

Read Psalm 19:14

- 32. What two things do we desire to be acceptable to the Lord?
 A. _____
 B. _____
- 33. Who is the Lord to us? My _____ and _____

Read Psalm 49:3

- 34. What shall your mouth speak?
- 35. What shall the meditation of your heart give?
- 36. Can you see that with meditating the Word of God, He shall give you revelation and understanding?

37. Can you see how it is only by knowing the Word of God that we are able to do the will of God?

Read Proverbs 4:20-27

38. "My Son, give _____ to My words;
_____ your ear to My sayings.
Do not let them _____ from your eyes;
_____ them in the midst of your _____;
For they are _____ to those who find them.
And _____ to all their flesh.
Keep your heart with all _____.
For out of it spring the _____ of life.
Put away from you a _____ mouth.
And put _____ lips far from you.
Let your eyes look _____ ahead,
And your eyelids look _____ before you.
_____ the path of your feet,
And let _____ your ways be _____.
DO NOT _____ to the right or the left;
_____ your foot from _____.

39. Read Psalm 37 and meditate on God's Word and promises to you.

How to Meditate on God's Word (Discipleship Answer Key)

1. The Spirit
2. Nothing
3. Spirit and Life
4. This world
5. By the renewing of our minds
6. A. The good
B. Acceptable
C. Perfect
7. No
8. No
9. A. Walk not in the counsel of the ungodly
B. Stands in the path of sinners
C. Sits in the seat of the scornful
10. The law of the Lord
11. Day and night
12. Like a tree planted by the rivers of water
13. Fruit
14. No
15. Prosperity
16. A. True
B. Nobel
C. Just
D. Pure
E. Lovely
F. Good report
G. Virtue
H. Praiseworthy
17. A. The things we learned
B. Received
C. Heard
D. Saw
18. The God of peace will be with you
19. Meditate on it
20. That we may observe to do all according to His Word
21. Prosperous and good success
22. A. Be strong
B. Be of good courage
C. Don't fear
D. Don't be dismayed
23. The Lord your God is with you wherever you go
24. For as he thinks in his heart, so he is
25. What we think
26. Yes
27. That he wouldn't sin against God
28. Meditate – contemplate – delight – forget - word
29. Yes
30. The proud
31. Meditate on His precepts
32. A. The words of my mouth
B. The meditation of my heart
33. Strength and Redeemer

34. Wisdom
35. Understanding
36. Yes
37. Yes
38. Attention – Incline – Depart – Keep- Heart –
Life – Health – Diligence- Issues – Deceitful –
Perverse -Straight – Right – Ponder – All –
Established – Turn – Remove – Evil
39. I will meditate on His Word

HOW TO MEDITATE ON GOD'S WORD (Additional information)

The word “meditation” actually means to “mutter to oneself.” It also means “to muse, to consider, to think upon.” Biblical meditation is not the act of emptying one’s mind but rather filling it with God’s Word. The way to meditate on the Word of God is to begin saying it out loud, forcing one’s mind to think about what is being said.

Meditation on God’s Word Renews our Minds

In Romans 12:2 we read, “And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God” (NKJV). From this scripture, we see that the result of renewing our minds is that we experience a transformation in our lives. And it is only through meditating on God’s Word that we experience the renewing of our minds. Still, there are misconceptions many Christians have regarding meditation that hinder the effectiveness of the Scriptures in their lives. For example, the act of just reading the Bible, although it is important, does not necessarily result in the renewing of our minds. Another popular misconception is that confessing God’s Word automatically equates to meditation of God’s Word. Confessing the Word of God does aid us in meditation, but I know people who quote Scripture all the time, yet their lives reflect very little of God’s nature and power.

As we look closer at what the Scriptures say about meditating on God’s Word, we begin to discover how it is accomplished. In Psalms 1:2-3 we read, “But his delight is in the law of the Lord; and in his law he meditates day and night. He shall be like a tree planted by rivers of water, that brings forth it’s fruit in it’s season, whose leaf shall not wither; and whatever he does shall prosper” (NKJV).

Notice what the scripture says about the man or woman who meditates on the Word of God. The psalmist says that their lives will be like a tree whose roots drive down so deep, and tap into a river so full of life that the tree of their lives will always produce fruit and never wither. Whatever they put their hand to will prosper. How is this accomplished? By meditating on God’s Word day and night. Another scripture that talks about meditating on the Word of God day and night is in Joshua 1:8: “This book of the Law shall not depart out of thy mouth; but thou shalt meditate therein day and night, that thou mayest observe to do according to all that is written therein: for then thou shalt make thy way prosperous and then thou shall have good success.”

At first this seems impossible. It is kind of like 1 Thessalonians 5:17, which says, “Pray without ceasing.” These are some pretty intimidating scriptures, especially if you are a mother with small children, or a wife and mother who works outside of the home. Have you ever worried without ceasing? Have you ever been full of anxiety day and night?

The same part of your soul that worries is the same part of your soul that prays or meditates. In other words, since you have the capacity to worry without ceasing, you have the capacity to pray and meditate day and night.

Meditation is not memorization; it is not thinking of each specific word in the scripture. Meditation is, first of all, recognizing the picture that the Scriptures paint for us. It may be a scripture that brings us a picture of peace or a picture of healing for a sick body. Maybe it is a picture of provision. Meditation is carrying that picture of life around on the inside of us. What is exciting is that God created our souls with the ability to carry pictures of victory around, day and night. We certainly know what it's like to be overwhelmed with fear day and night. In the same way, our hearts and minds can be saturated with the life of God's Word without ceasing. Even while we are asleep, our souls can be bathed with God's life-giving Word.

The Principle of Seeing and Doing

It is as we are meditating on the Word of God that we attack and tear down the strongholds in our thought lives. This is important because it is our thoughts that determine our actions. In other words, your body, or your life can never go in a direction that your thoughts have not previously gone. Look at a principle of truth found in the book of Joshua. In Joshua 1:8 God told Joshua to meditate on His Word day and night that he may observe to do according to all that was written in the Word. The principle is that we do what we see in our minds. The mind has two basic functions: memory and imagination. We are created by God to perform what we first see in our minds. Every action is first preceded by a thought that paints a picture. For example, adultery does not come on a man or woman like a seizure. The thoughts and fantasies of adultery are played over in one's mind long before the act of adultery takes place.

As we meditate on God's Word we are allowing the Word to paint a picture for us of strength, purity and victory. The process of exchanging these pictures with our negative thoughts is the process of renewing our minds. We really don't see with our eyes, we see with our minds. Our lives will rise and fall according to the picture that we carry around on the inside of us. For example, it was as Joshua meditated on God's promises that he began to see himself performing and experiencing those promises, consequently making them a reality.

The Power of God's Word

In 2 Corinthians 10:4 it says that the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strongholds. What are these weapons that God has given us? They are the Word of God, the blood of Jesus, the name of Jesus and the intercession of the believers. When we mix faith with these weapons, we begin to experience the power of His grace.

God's Word is more than black words on white paper; it is supernatural. Jesus said in John 6:63, "It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak to you, they are spirit, and they are life." In 2 Timothy 3:16 it says, "All scripture is given by inspiration of God [God breathed], and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness." John 6:63 says, "It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life."

Scripture is the standard or rule by which we are able to judge if what we believe is correct, regardless of how strongly we may feel about it. His Word, year after year, never changes and is always the same.

When we pick up the Bible, we need to remember that it is the book with God in it. It is not just black words on white paper. Actually, it is more than a book that tells us about God; it is a supernatural work. Therefore, you cannot separate God from His Word. The same attributes that apply to God, apply to His Word. Since we know that God is faithful, we know His word is faithful. If God is all truth, and it is impossible for Him to lie, then we know that the Scriptures are truth, and we can trust them with our lives. Stop seeing the Bible as just a book written about God, and begin to look at the Scriptures as an expression of the heart of the Father. The Scriptures are a living, breathing, testament of God's will for your life.

Most Christians look at the Scriptures as simply a manual for living. Even though that is partly true, if that is the only revelation they have of the Bible, then their time in the Word will be dry and lifeless. In John 1:1 we catch another glimpse of the true nature of the Scriptures. John 1:1 says, "In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God." In John 1:14 we read, "And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us."

In Revelation 19:11-13 we read, "And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war. His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns; and he had a name written, that no man knew, but he himself. And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood: and his name is called The Word of God."

The Word is like its author: Eternal, Powerful, Victorious, Living! The Word is the out-breathing of God. It is God speaking to you today. It speaks of winning, victory, joy, and surrender. His Word speaks of prosperity, healing, and victory over sin! The Word of God has the supernatural ability to change your life from the inside out! Ask the Holy Spirit to breathe the truth of His Word into your heart. Receive His power and life.

God's Word has the power to help us discern what our faith is in, and enables us to discern if what we are thinking is from God. Look at Hebrews 4:12: "For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any twoedged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart."

As we consistently expose our thoughts and feelings to God's Word, the light of His Word exposes the true motives of our feelings and subsequent decisions. As we continually expose our minds to the Word of God, we begin to see our thoughts and imaginations for what they really are.

RENEWING THE MIND

(lesson not available)

RENEWING THE MIND (Outline)

Meditating on God's Word is allowing the Word of God to invade our imaginations, or the part of us that sees in pictures. As we meditate on the Scriptures, we begin to see the life and power of God evident in our lives.

Renewing our minds is a result of meditating on the Scriptures.

Romans 12:2: "And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God."

Through the renewing of our minds, we can know the perfect will of God and are changed to look and act more like Jesus.

When you are born again you receive a new spirit, which is perfect, yet your soul needs be transformed.

2 Corinthians 10:3-5: "For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh: ⁴(For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds, ⁵Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ."

A stronghold is a system of thought empowered by emotions; it's a way of thinking or a mind set.

The primary weapon God has given us in dealing with strongholds is the Word of God.

Hebrews 4:12: "For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any twoedged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart."

John 6:63: "It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life."

The Word of God and the Holy Spirit are the only two things that can expose a stronghold for what it is and pull it down. By pulling down the strongholds our minds become renewed.

Renewing our minds is exchanging the pictures that the world has painted for us for the pictures that the Scriptures give us.

You'll see the power and life of God manifested in you as you renew your mind.

RENEWING THE MIND (Teacher's Guide)

1. What does 2 Timothy 3:16 say that Scripture is profitable for?
Teaching, rebuking, correcting, and training in righteousness.
2. According to John 6:63, Jesus words are what?
Spirit and life.
3. How are we transformed according to Romans 12:2?
By the renewing of our minds.
4. According to Romans 12:1-2, how do we find God's good, acceptable, and perfect will for our lives?
By presenting our bodies as a living sacrifice to the Lord.
5. Explain in detail the meaning of Proverbs 4:20-23
Listen and take heed to God's Word. Keep God's Word before you constantly. Guard your heart and affections, they influence everything in your life.

RENEWING THE MIND (Detailed Teacher's Guide)

Note: The following information may be read out loud (a numbered section at a time) with the person(s) being disciplined. After each numbered section is read, pause and ask the question(s) that correspond to the paragraph(s), and then discuss them.

¹ In 2 Corinthians 10:4-5 we read: “For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal but mighty in God for pulling down strongholds, casting down arguments and every high thing that exalts itself against the knowledge of God, bringing every thought into captivity to the obedience of Christ.” (NKJV). A stronghold may be an intense struggle with drugs, alcohol, violence, depression, a lust for power, or any other addictive thought pattern that preoccupies our minds to the point of being obsessive.

Even though these perceptions may be destructive to our lives, we continue to hold fast to them, because they have become so much a part of our makeup and behavior. It takes a supernatural work of the Holy Spirit through the Word of God to expose these thoughts as incorrect. It is only the Word of God with the work of the Holy Spirit that has the power to expose these well-dressed lies.

² God's Word is the only thing that the Holy Spirit can use to destroy destructive reasonings.

Scripture is the standard, or rule, by which we are to judge whether what we are believing is correct, regardless of how strongly we may feel about it. His Word never changes—it is always the same. Our opinions may change, and we may deal with different perceptions in life, but God's Word endures forever.

When we pick up the Bible, we need to remember that it is the book with God in it. It is not just black words on white paper. As we meditate on the Word of God, we attack and tear down the strongholds in our thought lives.

¹ What is a stronghold?

² (a) What does 2 Timothy 3:16 say that scripture is profitable for?

(b) According to John 6:63, Jesus' words are what?

³ In Romans 12:2 we read, “And do not be conformed to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind, that you may prove what is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God.” (NKJV) This scripture indicates that the result of renewing our minds is that we experience a transformation in our lives. It is only through meditating on God’s Word that we experience the renewing of our minds.

As we read what the Scriptures say about mediating on God’s Word, we begin to discover how it is accomplished.

God told Joshua that he was to meditate on His Word day and night “that you [Joshua] may observe to do according to all that is written in it” (NKJV). The principle is that we do what we see in our minds. The mind has two basic functions: memory and imagination. We are created by God to perform what we first see in our minds. Every action is first preceded by a thought-picture. For example, adultery does not come upon a man or woman like a seizure. The thoughts and fantasies of adultery are played over in one’s mind long before the act of adultery takes place.

⁴ When we meditate on God’s Word, we allow the Word to paint a picture for us. This process is the process of “renewing” our minds.

When we meditate on God’s promises, we can begin to see ourselves receiving and experiencing those promises, consequently making them a reality with our actions.

³ (a) How are we transformed according to Romans 12:2?

(b) According to Romans 12:1-2, how do we find God’s good, acceptable, and perfect will for our lives?

⁴ Explain in detail the meaning of Proverbs 4:20-23.

RENEWING THE MIND (Discipleship Questions)

Read Romans 12:1-2

1. What is our reasonable service (worship) to God?
2. In addition to presenting our bodies as a reasonable sacrifice to God, what are we not to be to this world?

Definition of Transform: to change into another form, to undergo a complete change, which, under the power of God, will find expression in character and conduct. A process.

3. By renewing our minds from the world to the Word of God, what is it that we are proving?

Read Hebrews 13:8

4. Is Jesus Christ prone to changing?
5. "Jesus Christ is the same _____, _____ and _____."

Read Romans 3:3-4

6. Would the unbelief of some people make God's word and His faithfulness void and untrue?
7. What does verse 4 say about God's Word?
8. What does it say about man?
9. If Jesus Christ never changes, and God's Word is true, do you feel you can trust God when He tells you to do, or not to do something?

Read Isaiah 26:3-4

10. Doing this will keep you in perfect peace.
11. If your mind is stayed on the Lord, it is because you _____ Him.
12. Who is your everlasting strength?

Read Ephesians 4:17-24

13. If you are in Christ Jesus, how should you no longer walk?
14. What is the consequence of the ignorance in those who choose to not walk with Jesus?

15. What have the “Gentiles” given themselves over to since they alienated themselves from the life of God?
16. In verse 22, what must you put off?
17. What are you commanded to do in verse 23?
18. In verse 24, what must you put on?

Read Colossians 3:1-2

19. What are we to seek?
20. What are we to set our mind on?
21. What are we commanded to NOT set our minds on?
22. Why do you think we are not to set our minds on the things of this world?

Read John 7:16-18

23. What shall we know if we seek to do God’s will?
24. What does one seek if he speaks from himself?
25. Is that prideful?
26. Who is true and has no unrighteousness in Him?

Read John 8:31-32, 36

27. Who are Christ’s disciples?
28. Once we know the truth, what will it do for us?
29. How is it that we would know the truth concerning Christ?
30. Who is it that makes us free indeed?

Read Colossians 2:6-10

31. What are we to do once we have received Jesus?

32. Verse 7 tells us how we walk in Him, as we were taught. List the three things mentioned.

A. _____

B. _____

C. _____

33. What are we to beware of in verse 8?

34. In Whom does all the fullness of the Godhead abide bodily?

35. Are we complete in Him?

Read Colossians 1:9-14

36. What does Paul say he prays and asks for on our behalf?

“That you may be _____ with the _____ of His will in all _____ and spiritual _____.

That you may walk _____ of the Lord, fully _____ Him, being _____ in every good work, and _____ in the _____ of God.”

37. According to His glorious power we are “ _____ with all might.”

38. Why are we strengthened? “For all _____ and _____ with joy.”

39. In verse 12, what have we been qualified for?

40. What has He delivered us from?

41. What has He conveyed us into?

42. What two things did Christ do for us through His blood?

A. _____

B. _____

Read Hebrews 11:6

43. What must we have in order to please God?

44. What must we do in order to come to God?

45. Who is it that God rewards?

46. Based on what you have learned so far, how is it that we can diligently seek the Lord?

47. If you don't renew your minds to the things of God and meditate on His word, what do you think you will fill your mind and heart with?
48. Do you see why it is important to saturate your life, body, soul, mind, and spirit with the Word, who is Jesus?
49. Read Psalm 139 and marvel at what an awesome God you have who loves you with the same love He loves Christ!

RENEWING THE MIND
(Discipleship Answer Key)

1. To present my body as a living sacrifice
2. Conformed
3. What is that good and acceptable and perfect will of God.
4. No
5. Yesterday, Today, and Forever
6. Certainly not
7. He is Truth
8. He is a liar
9. Yes
10. Keeping your mind on Christ
11. Trust
12. The Lord
13. In the futility of your mind
14. They are alienated from the life of God
15. Lewdness, uncleanness, greediness
16. The old man, former conduct
17. Be renewed by the Spirit of the mind
18. The new man
19. Christ, Godly things
20. On things above
21. Things on the earth
22. It distracts us from what Christ has for us
23. His doctrine or teaching
24. His own glory
25. Yes
26. Jesus Christ
27. Those who abide in His word
28. Set us free
29. We would be set free
30. Jesus
31. Walk in Him
32. A. Rooted
B. Built up
C. Established in the faith
33. That anyone could cheat us thru philosophy and empty deceit, according to the traditions of men and the principles of this world.
34. Jesus
35. Yes
36. Filled—knowledge—wisdom—understanding—worthy—pleasing—fruitful—increasing—knowledge
37. Strengthened
38. Patience—Longsuffering
39. To be partakers of the inheritance

40. The power of darknes
41. The kingdom of the Son
42. A. Redemption
B. Forgiveness of sins
43. Faith
44. Believe
45. Those who diligently seek Him
46. Be in His Word, pray, study, worship
47. If you don't renew your minds to the things of God and meditate on His word, what do you think you will fill your mind and heart with?
48. Do you see why it is important to saturate your life, body, soul, mind, and spirit with the Word, who is Jesus?
49. Read Psalm 139 and marvel at what an awesome God you have who loves you with the same love He loves Christ!

RENEWING THE MIND (Additional Information)

Romans 12:1-2: “I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service. ²And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.”

(Romans 12:2) Many people think that if they fulfill the conditions of verse one that everything else will automatically work out. Yet Paul goes on to state that we also have to renew our minds. There have been many people who have had a genuine commitment to the Lord, but they didn't renew their minds through God's Word, and they suffered many problems that they didn't have to.

(Romans 12:2) The Greek word that was translated “conformed” here is the word “suschematizo,” meaning “to fashion alike, i.e. conform to the same pattern.” This scripture is telling us that we should be different than the unbelievers. Most Christians recognize this, but they seem at a loss as to how to accomplish it. This verse goes on to give us the answer: The key is our minds. “As he thinketh in his heart, so is he” (Proverbs 23:7).

If we think on the same things that the world thinks on, we are going to get the same results. If we keep our minds stayed upon God through the study of His Word and fellowship with Him, then we'll have perfect peace (Isaiah 26:3). It's that simple.

(Romans 12:2) The Greek word that was translated “transformed” here is the word “metamorphoo” and is the same word that we get our word “metamorphosis” from. It is describing a complete change like that of a caterpillar changing into a butterfly. This word is also the same word that was used to describe Jesus' transformation when His garments became white as light (Matthew 17:2).

Making our thinking line up with God's Word will affect this complete transformation in our lives.

(Romans 12:2) When a person is born again, he becomes a totally new creation in his spirit. This spiritual salvation is complete. He doesn't need any more faith, joy, or power. That person is complete in Him (Colossians 2:10).

However, it is not God's will that we just be changed on the inside; He wants to manifest this salvation in our physical lives. That takes place through the renewing of our minds. Man is a spirit, soul, and body (1 Thessalonians 5:23). Our spirits are as perfect as they will ever be in heaven. If we will change our thinking so that we believe what God says in His Word about who we are and what we have, this agreement between our spirit and soul forms a majority, and our flesh will experience the life of God that has been deposited in our spirits.

If we fail to renew our minds, we can live our entire time on this earth without experiencing the abundant life that Jesus provided for us (John 10:10).

(Romans 12:2) The dictionary defines “prove” as “to establish the truth or validity of by evidence or argument; to be shown to be; turn out.” Therefore, this is speaking of how to physically display God’s will in our lives. This is a promise that if we fulfill the requirements of these two verses, we will prove—not might prove—but WILL prove the good, and acceptable, and perfect will of God.

Finding God’s will for our lives is not hard when we do what these verses instruct us to do. It is impossible to miss God’s will once we commit ourselves to God as living sacrifices and begin to renew our minds. Finding God’s will for our lives only becomes hard when we are not totally committed to God.

THE IMPORTANCE OF CHRIST'S CHURCH

(lesson not available)

THE IMPORTANCE OF CHRIST'S CHURCH (Outline)

In God's heart there is one church. If we have received Jesus as our personal Savior, then we belong to the church or body of Christ, as a whole, universally.

There are local expressions of the universal church today. In the New Testament, most of Paul's letters were addressed to a church in a specific city.

Ephesians 4:10-12, "He that descended is the same also that ascended up far above all heavens, that he might fill all things. ¹¹And he gave some, apostles; and some, prophets; and some, evangelists; and some, pastors and teachers; ¹²For the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying of the body of Christ."

There are five offices, or functions, filled within the body of Christ. God designed these offices to function within the local church setting. The purpose of these offices, or gifts from Jesus, is that through these gifts, the expression of His life will bring us into a place of ministry and cause us to be empowered to effectively serve Him and be effective.

Acts 2:42, "And they continued stedfastly in the apostles' doctrine and fellowship, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers."

Being a part of a local church includes participating in the following ways:

1. Giving of yourself to the teaching that comes from God's ministry gifts.
2. Fellowshiping with other Christians.
3. Breaking bread together.
4. Praying together.
5. Learning how to commit to each other beyond a place of convenience—submitting to, serving, and loving one another.
6. Becoming involved in a common goal or vision of a particular church and serving in that area.

You will experience greater growth as a Christian if you commit yourself to a local body of believers and begin to serve there.

Pray and ask the Lord to direct you to a local church. Visit and see if there's a connection. See how your spirit and heart respond to that church, to its vision, to the teachings of the pastor, and to the people in the congregation. God has a place for you to serve and a place for you to receive ministry.

THE IMPORTANCE OF CHRIST'S CHURCH (Teacher's Guide)

1. How does Ephesians 1:22-23 describe the universal church?
As the Body of Christ.
2. How does 1 Corinthians 1:2 describe the local church that was at Corinth?
As the Church of God—sanctified (set apart) and called (invited) to be Saints.
3. According to Ephesians 4:11-12, what is the real job of the apostle, prophet, evangelist, pastor and teacher?
To perfect the Saints that they might do the work of the ministry (or works of service).
4. What was the early church like, according to Acts 2:44-47?
They were together, they shared with each other, they worshipped together regularly—met in homes, had communion, shared meals, and praised God.
5. What advice do we glean from Hebrews 10:24-25?
Spur one another on toward love and good deeds. Don't forsake the assembling of ourselves together, and be sure to exhort (encourage) one another.

THE IMPORTANCE OF CHRIST'S CHURCH
(Detailed Teacher's Guide not available)

THE IMPORTANCE OF CHRIST'S CHURCH
(Discipleship Questions)

Read Ephesians 1:22-23

1. What did God put under Jesus' feet?
2. What did God make Jesus head over?
3. What is He calling His body?
4. Is the Church the fullness of Christ?

Read 1 Corinthians 1:2, 10

5. What two things describe the church of Corinth in this verse?

A. _____
B. _____

6. What two things did Paul plead with the church?

A. _____
B. _____

7. What two things did Paul encourage the church to do?

A. _____
B. _____

Read Ephesians 4:11-12

8. What are the five offices mentioned in verse 11?

A. _____
B. _____
C. _____
D. _____
E. _____

9. What was the purpose for Christ giving these gifts to the church?

A. _____
B. _____
C. _____

Read Acts 2:44-47

10. "Now all who _____ were _____, and had _____ things in _____."
11. Why did they sell all their goods?
12. How did they continue in the temple daily?
13. What did they do from house to house?
14. With what attitude did they eat their food?
15. In verse 47, how did the people respond toward God?
16. What did the Lord do for the people?

Read Hebrews 10:24-25

17. In what way are we to consider one another?
 - A. _____
 - B. _____
18. What must we not forsake?
19. What else must we do as we see the Day approaching?

Read Psalm 84:4

20. Dwelling in God's house, people will still be _____?

Read Isaiah 38:20

21. Where is it that we are to sing songs and play instruments unto the Lord?
22. Why are we so filled with joy that would prompt us to do this?

Read Micah 4:2

23. What will we learn in the House of God?

Read Psalm 84:10

24. What is one day better than in the house of God?
25. What did David say he would rather be?

Read Matthew 21:13

26. What does Jesus call His Father's house?
27. What had the people made His house instead?

Read Mark 11:17

28. Who was this house of prayer available to?

Read John 2:16

29. What did Jesus say that the people had made His Father's house into?
30. In conclusion, what is the purpose for God's house?

THE IMPORTANCE OF CHRIST'S CHURCH
(Discipleship Answer Key)

1. All things
2. All things to the church
3. Church
4. Yes
5. A. Sanctified in Christ
B. called to be saints
6. A. Speak the same thing
B. Have no divisions
7. A. Be perfectly joined in the same mind
B. And judgment
8. A. Apostles
B. Prophets
C. Evangelists
D. Pastors
E. Teachers
9. A. For equipping the saints
B. For the work of the ministry
C. For the edifying of the Body of Christ
10. Believed – together – all – common
11. To provide for the needs of the body
12. With one accord
13. Break bread
14. With gladness and simplicity of heart
15. Praise
16. Added to His church daily
17. A. In love
B. In good works
18. Assembling ourselves together
19. Exhort one another
20. Praising God
21. In the house of the Lord
22. The Lord saved me
23. His ways
24. A thousand elsewhere
25. A doorkeeper
26. A house of prayer
27. A den of thieves
28. All nations
29. A house of merchandise
30. Praise, worship, teaching, encouragement

IMPORTANCE OF CHRIST'S CHURCH (Additional Information)

The word "Church" is:

- a. Derived probably from the Greek word "kuriakon," meaning "the Lord's house," that was used by ancient authors to describe the place of worship. In the New Testament it is the translation of the Greek word "ecclesia," which is synonymous with the Hebrew word "kahal" of the Old Testament—both words simply mean "an assembly." The precise meaning can only be known from the connection in which the word is found. There is no clear instance of this word being used for a place of meeting or worship, although in post-apostolic times, it clearly received this meaning. Nor is this word ever used to denote the inhabitants of a country united in the same profession, as when we say, "the Church of England," "the Church of Scotland," etc. We find the word "ecclesia" used in the following senses in the New Testament:
 1. It is translated "assembly" in the ordinary classical sense (Acts 19:32, 39, 41).
 2. It denotes the whole body of the redeemed, all those whom the Father has given to Christ, the invisible, universal church (Ephesians 5:23, 25, 27, 28, and Hebrews 12:23).
 3. A few Christians associated together in observing the ordinances of the gospel are an ecclesia (Romans 16:5, and Colossians 4:15).
 4. All the Christians in a particular city, whether they assemble together in one place or in several places for religious worship, are an ecclesia. Thus all the disciples in Antioch, forming several congregations, were one church (Acts 13:1). We read of "the Church of God at Corinth" (1 Corinthians 1:2), "the Church at Jerusalem" (Acts 8:1), and "the Church of Ephesus" (Revelations 2:1).
 5. The whole body of professing Christians throughout the world (1 Corinthians 15:9, Galatians 1:13, and Matthew 16:18), are the church of Christ. The visible church consists of all those throughout the world that profess the true religion, together with their children. It is called "visible" because its members are known and its assemblies are public. Here there is a mixture of wheat and chaff, of saints and sinners. God has commanded his people to organize themselves into distinct visible ecclesiastical communities, with constitutions, laws, officers, badges, ordinances, and discipline, for the great purpose of giving visibility to His kingdom, of making known the gospel of that kingdom, and of gathering in all its elect subjects.

Each one of these distinct organized communities, which is faithful to the great King is an integral part of the visible church, and all together constitute the universal visible church. A credible profession of Christ constitutes a person—a member of this church. This is “the kingdom of heaven,” whose character and progress are set forth in the parables recorded in Matthew 13:1.

The church invisible “consists of the whole number of the elect that have been, are, or shall be gathered into one under Christ, the head thereof.” This is a pure society, the church in which Christ dwells. It is the body of Christ. It is called “invisible” because the greater part of those who constitute it are already in heaven or are yet unborn, and also because its members still on earth cannot certainly be distinguished.

The qualifications of membership in it are internal and are hidden. It is unseen except by Him who “searches the heart.” “The Lord knoweth them that are his” (2 Timothy 2:19). The church, to which the attributes, prerogatives, and promises appertaining to Christ’s kingdom belong, is a spiritual body consisting of all true believers, i.e., the church invisible.

1. ITS UNITY: God has never had only one church on earth. We sometimes speak of the Old Testament church and of the New Testament church—the church was not to be changed but enlarged (Isaiah 49:13-23, 60:1-14). When the Jews are at length restored, they will not enter a new church, but will be grafted again into “their own olive tree” (Romans 11:18-24, and Ephesians 2:11-22). The apostles did not set up a new organization. Under their ministry disciples were added to the already existing church (Acts 2:47).
2. ITS UNIVERSALITY: It is not confined to any particular country or outward organization, but comprehends all believers throughout the whole world.
3. ITS PERPETUITY: It will continue through all ages to the end of the world. It can never be destroyed. It is an “everlasting kingdom.”

Adapted from Easton’s Bible Dictionary 1897

DELIVERANCE

Don Krow

Today we're going to talk about demonology. Jesus spent His ministry on earth casting out demons, healing the sick, raising the dead, and doing other miracles. About one-fourth of His ministry was spent expelling evil spirits from people. The Bible tells us in Acts 10:38, "How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power: who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil; for God was with Him." Also 1 John 3:8 says, "For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil." I used to have a different view of demonology—that demons, evil spirits, unclean spirits, devils, whatever you want to call them—only appeared in India or third world countries where the people don't worship the True and Living God but worship idols. I was wrong.

I want to tell you about an experience I had a few years ago in a church in Dallas, Texas. All the people were singing, when all of a sudden this girl just fell on the floor. It looked like she was having a seizure. There happened to be a medical doctor there whose name was Dr. Rice. Some people in the church had a home about a block from the church, and he said to take her there so he could examine her. When we got her to their home, this girl was like a wildcat! Her eyes were dilated, and there was a strong masculine voice speaking out of this little bitty 18 or 19 year old girl, who probably weighed less than a hundred pounds. Suddenly, this thing began to attack me verbally, saying things like, "YOU'RE GOING TO HELL!" I said, "No, I'm not." I was scared because I'd never seen anything like this before. It said, "YES, YOU ARE GOING TO HELL," and I said, "No, I'm not. I'm not going to hell." It seemed to have power or authority over me, and I didn't know what to do or how to deal with the thing that was in this girl.

One of my good friends was so scared he left right away and was out of there fast, and there I was. I thought, "What in the world do I do?" The girl had supernatural strength, and she began to speak something like German that she had never learned—all kinds of wild manifestations of the devil came out of her. She was demon-possessed, and though I didn't know what to do, I'd always believed the Bible has power. It's like when you were a kid and watched those scary Dracula horror movies. The vampire would come toward the person, and all of a sudden the person would pull out a cross and the vampire would go "ARRRGH!" That's the way I thought about the Bible. I knew it had power, but I didn't know how to get the power out of the Bible. The grace of God helped me, because I'd never experienced anything like this before. I opened my Bible to the New Testament, and happened to turn to the book of Philippians. I began to read in chapter 2 verses 8-11: "And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross. Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name: That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ Lord, to the glory of God the Father."

The demon said, "Don't say that! I can't stand those words! Don't say that!" I thought, "What a reaction!" So I said, "Well, at the name of Jesus every knee should bow—things in heaven, things on earth, and things under the earth." "Don't say that! I can't stand those words! Don't say that, don't say that!" I thought, "This devil is going crazy inside this girl and all I'm doing is reading the Word of God!" So I read it again, "And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross. Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him

a name which is above every name: That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow.” Again, there was the same reaction; “Don’t say that, I can’t stand that!” Then the demon grabbed the girl by her ears, and she said, “Don’t say that! I can’t stand those words, don’t say that!” The devil threw the girl down before me and she began to bow at the name of Jesus. And I said, “At the name of Jesus every knee will bow, whether in heaven or in earth, or under the earth.”

Just moments before, that devil had authority and power over me. I thought he was going to whip me, beat me up, throw me out of there—I didn’t know! All I knew was that the Bible has power, and I opened it and began to read. . The Bible says in Ephesians 6:17, “And take. . . the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God.” You see, there is an offensive weapon which is like a sword that will cut and hurt the enemy. It is the sword of the Spirit, the Word of God. Do you remember when Jesus was tempted? The devil came to Him and said, “I’ll give you all the kingdoms of the world if you will bow down and worship me.” Jesus said, “Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve” (Matthew 4:10). Then the devil tempted Him, and tempted Him again, and Jesus said, “It is written, Satan . . . it is written” and quoted the Word of God. He used the sword of the Spirit and the Bible says the devil took off and left Him for a season.

The only weapon we have to defeat the enemy is the sword of the Spirit which is the Word of God. Do you know what I learned from that? I learned this: Every time I want to study the Word, I think about how hungry I am and have to go find something to eat, or I think about all the things I didn’t do that day. I know that those in this discipleship class will have all sorts of excuses when they’re not here, why they can’t come. I finally figured out why. There’s something in the Bible God wants us to know and the devil doesn’t want us to know. So every time you come to study God’s Word, or do a discipleship class, there’s something in the Word of God the enemy doesn’t want you to know—he doesn’t want you to know the God behind these words.

There is a kingdom of darkness, and there is the kingdom of God’s dear Son. In Colossians 1:13, Paul says, “Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son.” What kingdom are you in? A kingdom is where someone has the rule and reign. Jesus Christ is a King. Have you ever given your life to Him? Are you following Him today, or are you letting other things have priority in your life? Jesus said this in Luke 6:46, “And why call ye me, Lord, Lord, and do not the things which I say?” He wants to be preeminent in your life, to be number one. There is a kingdom of darkness that is trying to keep Him from that preeminence, that place of reigning in your life, because the enemy wants to rise up in that place of preeminence. Turn to Jesus today with all your heart, and realize there is an enemy. His name is Satan and he has demonic power, but the Bible tells us we have authority over him.

Jesus said in Matthew 10:8, “Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils: freely ye have received, freely give.” Preach the Gospel of the Kingdom, and as you go you have authority over the enemy. Don’t let the enemy talk you out of what God has for your life any longer. Make Jesus Lord and number one in your life. You will never regret it. God bless you.

DELIVERANCE (Outline)

Jesus spent about one-fourth of His earthly ministry healing the sick, raising the dead, and casting out demons. One-fourth of that ministry was actually spent expelling evil spirits from people.

Acts 10:38: “How God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power: who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil; for God was with him.”

I John 3:8: “He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.”

Philippians 2:8-11: “And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross.
⁹Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name: ¹⁰That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth;
¹¹And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.”

Ephesians 6:17: “And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God.”

The Bible has power. We have an offensive weapon—the sword of the Spirit, which is the Word of God. It is like a sword and it will hurt our enemy, Satan.

Jesus quoted the Word of God when He was tempted by Satan. He used the sword of the Spirit, which is the Word of God, and the devil left him.

The only weapon we have to defeat the enemy is the Word of God.

There is something in the Word of God that the devil doesn't want us to know. He doesn't want us to know the God behind the words and he will try to keep us from studying God's Word.

Colossians 1:13, “Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son.”

There is a kingdom of darkness and a kingdom of God’s Son. A kingdom is a place where someone has the rule and reign. Jesus is the king in the kingdom of God’s Son. Jesus wants to be number one in your life, and the kingdom of darkness is trying to keep Him from reigning in that place.

There is an enemy, Satan, and he has demonic power, but we have authority over him. Make Jesus Lord of your life and don’t let the enemy talk you out of what God has for your life.

DELIVERANCE (Teacher's Guide)

1. How does Ephesians 6:12 describe our spiritual conflict with the demonic realm?
It is described as wrestling.
2. What does Mark 16:17 teach us about the authority of the believer?
We have the authority in Jesus' name to cast out demons.
3. What must a person seeking deliverance from demons do according to James 4:7?
Submit yourselves to God, and resist the devil.
4. According to John 17:17, how can people be set free from spiritual darkness?
By being set apart to the truth of God's word.
5. Music anointed by God has great power. What do we learn from 1 Samuel 16:23?
That anointed music can cause evil spirits to depart.
6. According to James 1:14, how does Satan deceive us into making something evil look desirable?
He works with our own lust (to make something evil look desirable).

DELIVERANCE (Detailed Teacher's Guide)

Note: The following information may be read out loud (a numbered section at a time) with the person(s) being disciplined. After each numbered section is read, pause and ask the question(s) that correspond to the paragraph(s), and then discuss them.

¹Many battles have been fought over whether a Christian can be demon possessed. The Greek word for “possessed” is “daimonizomai” and literally means “to be demonized.” The Bible makes no clear distinction between degrees of demon activity (such as oppressed, depressed, possessed, etc.), but simply refers to people as being “demonized.” All Christians are fighting against spiritual powers (Ephesians 6:12), and if we don't put on the whole armor of God, Satan can certainly affect us or even control us.

²When a person has allowed a demon to gain entrance into his life to the point that the demon is controlling him, he often needs the aid of a Spirit-filled believer who knows his authority (power) in Jesus, to take authority over the demon and cast it out. The person receiving the deliverance must also resist the demon. If the person receiving deliverance does not sincerely want to be set free, it will either stop the deliverance or produce the sad situation Jesus describes in Matthew 12:43-45.

³The best way to administer deliverance is through God's Word (Psalms 107:20, Matthew 8:16, John 8:31-33, 15:3, and 17:17). As a person receives the Word, it will set him free and also help guard against the situation where the demon tries to come back in with seven other spirits. In severe cases of being demonized, the individual clearly needs the help of a believer, and that's the reason Jesus equipped all believers with authority over evil spirits (Matthew 10:1, and Mark 16:17).

⁴Anointed praise and worship will also drive off evil spirits. For a person who knows God and is unmovable in his relationship with Him, there is no problem casting out devils. However, as illustrated in Acts 19:13-17, a person who doesn't really “know” Jesus should not attempt a deliverance.

¹How does Ephesians 6:12 describe our spiritual conflict with the demonic realm?

²(a) What does Mark 16:17 teach us about the authority of the believer to cast out demons?

(b) What must a person seeking deliverance from demons do according to James 4:7?

³According to John 17:17, how can people be set free from spiritual darkness?

⁴Music anointed by God has great power. What do we learn from 1 Samuel 16:23?

⁵How does demon possession occur? Howard O. Pittman, a Baptist minister for 35 years, ruptured his main body trunk artery and suffered physical death on August 3, 1979. At this point He appeared before the Lord and some interesting things were revealed to him that I would like to share with you.

This is Howard's account:

"My escort (an angel) informed me that he wanted me to see a demon in the process of actually possessing a human being . . . we were in the same hospital with my body but in a different room. The room appeared to be an employee's lounge. I saw tables, chairs, dishes with food, and in the room were a young man and a young lady facing each other while laughing and talking. It was obvious that they could not see me nor the angels, yet I was so close to them I could almost reach out and touch them. I could hear and understand every word they said. They thought they were alone and as they laughed and talked, they were unaware of the horrible creature standing between them. This demon was so horrible in appearance of his shape and form that I recognized him immediately to be from the lower group (of demons), the perverted group. The angels, the demons, and I were in the spirit in that room and were aware of everything that was happening. Those in the flesh were only aware of themselves for they could not see or hear us even though we were back in this physical world. Since we were in the spirit, we still communicated with our minds.

"I was not really paying close attention to the words the two were speaking. My entire attention was focused upon the demon. He was a most horrible looking thing, reminding me of an over-grown, stuffed, slimy, green frog all out of shape and proportion. He moved slowly up into the face of the man then, suddenly, like a puff of smoke, he seemed to disappear into the face of the man just as if he went right through the pores of his skin. When the demon had entered the man, the angel said, "Now it's done." The angel then proceeded to tell me how it was that this particular man was possessed. He stated, "The demon made himself desirable and attractive to the human." The angel then pointed out to me that mankind has a sovereign will, all his own, beyond which the demons cannot come. He also pointed out to me that the angels could not come beyond that sovereign will of man. God, Himself, will not violate that will. We are made in the image of God, therefore, we were given, like God, a sovereign will, the right to choose our destiny.

"Because of this . . . demons have developed great skills in deception. The basic principle of their operations is to make something evil as desirable, beautiful, and non-threatening as possible so that the person being tempted will lower his guard and accept whatever it is that is being used to cause sin. Once someone is deceived, it becomes easier for the deception to remain. In the case of possession, it becomes easier for the demon to maintain his control." (Placebo, by Howard Pittman, pgs. 22-23).

⁵How does James 1:14 show us Satan's deception to make something evil look desirable?

Satan can do nothing about Christians who are in Christ, but if he can deceive you into believing his lies about you or God, he will defeat you. You don't have to out-muscle him to be free of his influence, you just have to out-truth him. Believe, declare and act upon truth, that is, God's Word. If additional help is needed seek out believers who know their authority in Christ.

More information can be obtained on this subject by contacting
<http://www.freedominchrist.com/resource.htm> on the worldwide web.

DELIVERANCE
(Discipleship Questions)

Read Mark 16:17-18

1. List the signs that will follow those who believe in Jesus Christ.
 - A. _____
 - B. _____
 - C. _____
 - D. _____
 - E. _____
2. In Whose name will all this be done?
3. Do you recognize that you can't do any of these things in your own name?
4. If we are to do them in Jesus' name, do you see why it is important to believe in Him?

Read John 17:14-17

5. What did Jesus give to us in verse 14?
6. What was the worlds reaction to those who believed the Word?
7. Was Christ of this world? _____ Are we, if we believe in Him? _____
8. What was Jesus' prayer to the Father on our behalf?
9. " _____ them by Your truth."
10. What is "Truth"?

Sanctify: separation of the believer of evil things and ways, to make holy, purify, consecrate, to set apart.

Read John 14:6

11. In what three ways does Jesus describe Himself?
 - A. _____
 - B. _____
 - C. _____

Read John 8:31-32

12. How do you know if you are a disciple of Christ?

13. If you abide in His word, then “you shall know the _____.”
14. What will the truth do for us?

Read John 1: 1-2, 14

15. Who is the Word?

Read John 8:36

16. Who is it that makes you free?
17. And if Jesus makes you free, is that a temporary fix or permanent? (circle one)

Steadfast: firm, secure, sure, firmly seated, settled, with strength, fixed

Read Galatians 5:1

18. How are you to stand in the liberty, or freedom, with which Christ has made us free?
19. What does Paul warn us not to do in the second part of this scripture?
20. Can you see that we have a choice to make?

We have freedom and liberty in Christ, and yet the snare or trap of the devil is always before us.

21. Which will you choose to walk in this day?

Read James 4:7-10 (Amplified version)

22. Who are we to be subject, or submit ourselves to?
23. How are we to stand against the devil? (AMP)
24. What will the devil do if you resist him?
25. In verse 8, James exhorts us to do what?
26. He tells us to draw near to God directly after telling you to resist the devil. Can you see the simplicity and wisdom in this command?
27. How is it we are to approach God regarding our sins? (v8-9)
28. How are we to be in the presence of our Lord?
29. If we humble ourselves, what will He do for us?

Read Ephesians 6:12-17

30. Who and what do we wrestle with?
 - A. _____
 - B. _____
 - C. _____
 - D. _____
31. What do we have to put on in order to withstand the wiles of the devil?
32. What are we to gird our waists with?
33. What is our breastplate?
34. What do you shod your feet with?
35. What is your shield?
36. What will your shield protect you from?
37. What is your helmet?
38. What is the sword of the spirit?
39. Did you realize that all the armor you put on is defensive protection, and the only weapon we are to wield against the devil is the Word of God?

Salvation: deliverance, health, safety, rescue, prosperity, posterity, all is well, perfect peace, to save, protect, preserve, do well, make whole.

Read 1 Peter 5:6-9

40. How are you to be in the presence of the Lord?
41. What are you to do with all your cares?
42. Why does God want us to give Him all our cares?
43. What two things are we commanded to be in verse 8?
 - A. _____
 - B. _____
44. Why are we to do those things?
45. Who is our adversary?
46. What does he want to do to us?

47. How are we to stand against the devil?

Read John 10:10

48. What is the sole purpose of the thief [devil]?

- A. _____
- B. _____
- C. _____

49. What is Jesus' purpose?

Read Proverbs 1:10, 15

50. What are you to do if sinners entice you?

Read Proverbs 4:14-17

51. "DO NOT _____ the path of the _____."

52. "DO NOT _____ in the way of _____."

53. "_____, DO NOT _____ on it."

54. "_____ from it and _____ on."

Read James 1:13-16

55. Does God tempt us?

56. Who tempts us?

57. How are we tempted?

58. What happens when desire is conceived?

59. What does sin full-grown do to us?

60. What does verse 16 command us not to be?

Read 1 Samuel 16:23

61. What two things would happen when David play music to Saul?

- A. _____
- B. _____

62. Read Acts 10:38

What did Jesus do under the power of the Holy Spirit?

A. _____

B. _____ ...who were oppressed of the devil

Read 1 John 3:8

63. What is the purpose of the Son of God, Jesus? _____

Read Philippians 2:8-11

64. What was Christ found in the appearance of?

65. How far did Jesus humble Himself?

66. "Therefore," or because Christ was willing to humble Himself, what did God do for Him?

67. What did God give to His Son?

68. What must all those in heaven, on earth and under the earth do at the name of Jesus Christ?

Call your vice, or addiction or problem what you like, if it has a name, it must bow to Jesus.

Read Psalm 107:19-20

69. When did "they" cry out to the Lord?

70. What was God's response to their cries?

71. What did God send to them that healed them?

72. "And _____ them from their destructions."

73. Rewrite this verse making it personal. When it says "they, their, them", replace it with "I, me, my."

Read Psalm 17-19

74. Who did God deliver you from?

75. Who is your support?

76. Why did God choose to deliver you?

Read 1 Corinthians 10:13

77. What does God promise you regarding temptations?

DELIVERANCE (Discipleship Questions)

1. A. Cast out demons
B. Speak with new tongues
C. Poison won't hurt us
D. Lay hands on sick
E. They will recover
2. Jesus'
3. Yes
4. Yes
5. His Word
6. Hatred
7. No – No
8. Keep them from the evil one
9. Sanctify
10. The Word—Jesus
11. The Way, The Truth, The Life
12. By abiding in His Word
13. Truth
14. Set us free
15. Jesus
16. Jesus
17. Permanent
18. Steadfast
19. Be entangled with the yoke of bondage
20. Yes
21. Make a choice which one you will walk in this day?
22. God
23. Resisting
24. Flee
25. Draw near to God
26. Yes
27. With clean hands, and a pure heart, single-focused humility
28. Humble
29. He will lift us up
30. A. Principalities
B. Powers
C. Rulers of darkness
D. Wicked spirits
31. Take up the whole armor of God
32. The belt of Truth
33. Righteousness
34. The Gospel of peace
35. Faith
36. The Fiery darts of the devil
37. Salvation
38. The Word of God

39. Yes
40. Humble
41. Cast them upon the Lord
42. Because He cares for us
43. A. Sober
B. Vigilant
44. Because the adversary walks about like a roaring lion
45. The devil
46. Devour us
47. Steadfast in faith
48. A. Kill
B. Steal
C. Destroy
49. To give us life abundantly
50. Do Not consent
51. Enter - wicked
52. Walk - evil
53. Avoid it - travel
54. Turn away – pass
55. No
56. Ourselves
57. By our own desires and lusts
58. Gives birth to sin
59. Brings forth death
60. Deceived
61. A. Saul would become refreshed and well
B. Distressing Spirit would part
62. A. Do good
B. Healing all
63. To destroy the works of the devil
64. A man
65. To the point of death
66. Highly exalted Him
67. The name above every name
68. Bow their knee
69. In their troubles
70. He saved them
71. His Word
72. Delivered
73. I cried out to the Lord in my trouble and He saved me out of my distresses. He sent His word and healed me, and delivered me from all my destructions.
74. My strong enemy
75. The Lord
76. Because He delighted in Me
77. I won't be tempted beyond what I am able to bear

DELIVERANCE (Additional Information)

This is a letter that was sent to Don Krow:

“My girlfriend was possessed by evil spirits and she did so many stupid things that she did not know she did. It took almost seven days to cast out all the spirits that possessed her. After the final deliverance, wherein the strongman came out, the deliverance team of our Church told us that she was set free from demonic possession. Two months after her deliverance we had an altar call in the church and she went up and stood at the altar. When the minister laid hands on her suddenly evil spirits began to manifest and she was set free again. Before that night, she did not have condemning thoughts about her past; she just kept on praying, “Greater is He who is in me” and hoped the thoughts would be gone. I believe she was doing her best to keep on the right track with Jesus. My question is this: Even if you are speaking in tongues, praying everyday and during praise and worship, you can feel the presence of the Lord, can you still be demon possessed?” E.J.

The response to this letter was:

Dear E. J.: I would like to answer your question in the following four ways:

I would like to give you some general information (see part 1).

I would like to tell you how demon possession occurs (see part 2).

I would like to give you a personal experience (see part 3).

I would like to recommend some resources to help you and your girlfriend (see part 4).

Part 1 - General Information:

Many battles have been fought over whether or not a Christian can be demon possessed. The Greek word for possessed is “posit” and literally means “to be possessed.” The Bible makes no clear distinction between degrees of demon activity (such as oppressed, depressed, possessed, etc.), but simply refers to people as being ‘demonized.’ All Christians are fighting against spiritual powers (Ephesians 6:12), and if we don’t take and use the whole armor of God, Satan can certainly affect us or even control us.

When a person has allowed a demon to gain entrance into his life to the point that the demon is controlling him, he often times needs the aid of a Spirit-filled believer who knows his authority (power) in Jesus to take authority over the demon and cast it out. The person receiving the deliverance must also be resisting the demon. Failure of the person receiving deliverance to sincerely want to be set free will either stop the deliverance or produce the sad situation Jesus described in Matthew 12:43-45

The best way to administer deliverance is through God's Word (Psalms 107:20, Matthew 8:16, John 8:31-33, 15:3, and 17:17). As a person receives the Word, it will set him free and also help guard against this situation where the demon tries to come back in with seven other spirits. In severe cases the individual clearly needs the help of a believer, and that's the reason for Jesus equipping all believers with authority over evil spirits (Mt. 10:1, and Mk. 16:17)

Anointed praise and worship will also drive off evil spirits. For a person who knows God and is unmovable in his relationship with Him, there is no problem casting out devils. However, as illustrated in Acts 19:13-17, a person who doesn't really "know" Jesus should not attempt a deliverance.

Part 2 - How does demon possession occur?

Howard O. Pittman, a Baptist minister for 35 years, on August 3, 1979 ruptured his main body trunk artery and suffered physical death. At this point he appeared before the Lord and had some interesting things revealed to him that I would like to share with you.

"My escort (an angel) informed me that he wanted me to see a demon in the process of actually possessing a human being . . . we were in the same hospital with my body but in a different room. The room appeared to be an employee's lounge. I saw tables, chairs, dishes with food, and in the room were a young man and a young lady facing each other while laughing and talking. It was obvious that they could not see me nor the angels, yet I was so close to them I could almost reach out and touch them. I could hear and understand every word they said. They thought they were alone and as they laughed and talked, they were unaware of the horrible creature standing between them. This demon was so horrible in appearance of his shape and form that I recognized him immediately to be from the lower group (of demons), the perverted group. The angels, the demons, and I were in the spirit in that room and were aware of everything that was happening. Those in the flesh were only aware of themselves for they could not see or hear us even though we were back in this physical world. Since we were in the spirit, we still communicated with our minds.

“I was not really paying close attention to the words the two were speaking. My entire attention was focused upon the demon. He was a most horrible looking thing, reminding me of an over-grown, stuffed, slimy, green frog all out of shape and proportion. He moved slowly up into the face of the man then, suddenly, like a puff of smoke, he seemed to disappear into the face of the man just as if he went right through the pores of his skin. When the demon had entered the man, the angel said, “Now it’s done.” The angel then proceeded to tell me how it was that this particular man was possessed. He stated, “The demon made himself desirable and attractive to the human.” The angel then pointed out to me that mankind has a sovereign will, all his own, beyond which the demons cannot come. He also pointed out to me that the angels could not come beyond that sovereign will of man. God, Himself, will not violate that will. We are made in the image of God, therefore, we were given, like God, a sovereign will, the right to choose our destiny

“Because of this, . . . demons have developed great skills in deception. The basis principle of their operations is to make something evil as desirable, beautiful, and non-threatening as possible so that the person being tempted will lower his guard and accept whatever it is that is being used to cause sin. Once someone is deceived, it becomes easier for the deception to remain. In the case of possession, it becomes easier for the demon to maintain his control.” (Placebo, by Howard Pittman, pp. 22-23)

Part 3 - A Personal Experience:

One evening I was riding in an automobile with a woman when suddenly she began to shake uncontrollably and lose control of her driving ability. I immediately reached over, laid my hand on her and bound the demonic spirits in Jesus’ name.

I asked her if she could get to our friend’s apartment. She said she thought she could. By the time we got there she was manifesting demons of a violent nature. We took authority over them in Jesus’ name and asked God to give us the discerning of spirits (a gift of the Holy Spirit) so that we could deal with this situation. As the Lord gave us discernment we commanded each demon by name to go from her. It was a mighty victory over the kingdom of darkness that night.

The next morning she began to manifest the same demons again. It was at this point that I learned a spiritual lesson. Instead of saying, “I thought we cast these demons out, they must be back!” I stood my ground and said, “I commanded you spirits out last night and as far as I am concerned you’re out!” The manifestations ceased, and the girl was delivered. What Satan wanted was for me to deal with him in the physical realm by what I could see, hear, taste and feel, but instead I used the shield of faith and quenched the fiery darts of the wicked (Ephesians 6:16).

If Satan can get you to follow manifestations he will beat you in the physical realm by putting on a show instead of you standing on God's Word.

Satan can do nothing about your position in Christ, but if he can deceive you into believing his lies about you or God, he will defeat you. You don't have to out-muscle him to be free of his influence, you just have to out-truth him. Believe, declare and act upon truth, that is, God's Word.

Part 4 - Recommended Resources:

“Nothing is more foundational to your freedom from Satan's bondage than understanding and affirming what God has done for you in Christ and who you are as a result. We all live in accordance with our perceived identity” (The Bondage Breaker, by Neil Anderson, p. 42). E.J., you said your girlfriend was having condemning thoughts before her last attack by demons. If she sees herself as a helpless victim of Satan and his schemes, she will live like his victim and be in bondage to his lies. But if she sees herself as the dearly loved and accepted child that she really is, she will live like a child of God. (Life for Today Bible Study Commentary, Andrew Wommack Ministries)

I highly recommend for you and your girlfriend to read the book The Bondage Breaker by Neil T. Anderson. In it, he gives a chapter on the steps to freedom and the prayers that need to be prayed to see the freedom that your girlfriend is seeking. It is a well balanced book that puts the subject of demonology in its proper place. It's a how-to book, not just an informational book. You can buy a copy at your local Christian bookstore.

THE AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER

Andrew Wommack

In today's session I want to talk about the authority God has given us as believers. In order to address this, we're going to have to deal not only with the authority we have but the authority of Satan. He has been blown out of proportion. Christians have been led to believe we are fighting a being whose power is superior to ours, and we are just barely able to cope with him. That's not what the Scripture teaches at all. It does say in Ephesians 6:12, "For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places." So Satan is a factor; he does exist. He has a hierarchy of principalities and powers that we're dealing with, but in the verse just prior to that it says that we have to stand against the wiles of the devil. The only power Satan really has against us is deception. He doesn't have power to just overcome us.

In Genesis 3 we see that when the first temptation came against Adam and Eve, Satan didn't come with some superior force. For instance, instead of inhabiting a mammoth or an elephant, putting his foot on Adam's head, threatening them, and saying, "Serve me or else," he inhabited a snake, the most subtle creature God made. The word "subtle" means "sly, deceptive, or cunning." The reason Satan came through the snake was because he really didn't have the power to force Adam and Eve to do anything, he could only deceive. He came against the nature and character of God and began to criticize Him, saying, "God doesn't really love you—He's holding things back from you." He used deception to tempt Adam and Eve to sin against God. They were the ones who had all the authority, and the reason Satan had to do it this way was because he didn't have power to come against God.

There's so much more I don't have time to go in to, but one of the main points I want to get across is that when we talk about the authority of the believer, you have to recognize that Satan has zero power and authority over you. He is a defeated foe. His only power against you is to come against you with lies and deception. If your life is being destroyed, you can say, "Satan is the one who is firing these shots at me," but you are the one who is giving him the ammunition. You're the one who has to respond to his lies and deception. If we didn't yield to Satan, he would have no inroads or power against us. In 2 Corinthians 10:3-5 it says, "For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh: (For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds;) Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ." These scriptures are talking about the weapons of our warfare, and every weapon mentioned refers to our mind, dealing with thoughts.

Satan is a factor, and he came and tempted Jesus, but he didn't come with some superior power to fight Him. Instead, he came with words and tried to tempt Jesus and deceive Him. He told Jesus, "If you'll fall down and worship me, I'll give you all these things." The truth is, they weren't his to give. God's the one that owned everything. Jesus already owned everything by right of creation but He had laid down His right as Creator to become a man (Who, [Jesus] being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God: But made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men" Philippians 2:6-7). In doing this He showed us how a man can stand against Satan with the Word of God. Satan was trying to trick and deceive Him, which is exactly

what the verses in 2 Corinthians chapter 10 are dealing with. The weapons of our warfare are to deal with our thought life, to take captive and bring under control every thought into obedience to the Lord Jesus Christ. We're the ones who have authority. Satan doesn't have the power to destroy your lives. He doesn't have the power to make you sick, to make you depressed, or to take away your joy and peace. He doesn't have the power to force you to be angry. Satan doesn't have the power to do anything to you except through deception. You're the one who has been given all authority in heaven and in earth.

I want to quickly summarize some things. In the beginning God, of course, had all authority. All power and authority has to emanate from God, because He is the only one who has power in Himself. Everything else is delegated from Him. When He created the heavens and the earth, He had all power and authority. Then in Genesis 1:26, when God created Adam and Eve, He said, "Let them have dominion . . . over all the earth." Put that together with Psalm 115:16, which says, "The heaven, even the heavens, are the LORD'S: but the earth hath he given to the children of men." God had ownership of everything by right of being the Creator, but He gave dominion, or authority, over the earth to physical human beings. Satan has never had the right and power to rule over the earth. He took it through deceiving man to sin. God gave that power to mankind, and when man fell, he yielded his God-given authority and power over to the devil. Satan was never given power by God to oppress man or to rule this earth.

Scripture does say that Satan is the god of this world, but it's not because God made him the god of this world. God never put Satan in a position above mankind. He gave mankind dominion and authority over this earth. The only reason Satan has ever been able to oppress, dominate, or cause the problems he does is because people yielded their God-given authority to him. This posed a real problem for God because He was a Spirit, and He had given authority over this earth to physical human beings. Only people who had a physical body had the authority and power to rule and exercise influence in this earth. Satan had to come to us and get us to yield our authority to him. That's the reason that he likes to inhabit a body. In Scripture, demons had to have a body to possess, because Satan can't do anything unless he is using a physical human body to work through. Because God was a Spirit and had given authority to physical human beings, now in a sense He had His hands tied. It wasn't because God didn't have power and authority but because of His integrity. He gave authority to physical human beings, and to be true to His own word, He couldn't just take it back and say, "This isn't the way I wanted it; time out, stop, we're going to do it over." No, God bound Himself by His own word. Throughout history He looked for someone He could flow through, but the problem was that all men were corrupted and had yielded themselves to Satan. So what was He to do?

What God finally did was come to the earth Himself and become a man. This is tremendous when you understand it, because now the devil was in big trouble. He had been using mankind's power, and God couldn't intervene directly to solve all these problems, because man was willfully, legally yielding his God-given authority to Satan. Satan was wrong in what he did, but man gave him the authority and power that was theirs to give. But now, here came God, and He was no longer only the Spirit but was in the form of physical flesh. This put the devil in a bad situation because God not only had authority in heaven, but becoming a man gave Him authority on the earth. Jesus said in John 5:26-27, "For as the Father hath life in himself; so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself; And hath given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man." He was referring to His physical body.

Jesus came and exercised God-given authority—the devil tempted Him, and He never yielded to him—and Satan lost in every battle with Jesus. He took our sins, died for them, went to hell, rose again, and said in Matthew 28:18, "All authority is given unto me in heaven and in earth." He won back the

authority God had given mankind and man misused, and as God in the flesh, He now had all authority in heaven and in earth. In the very next verse He said, “Now you go, and you do these things.” In effect He was saying, “I now have all authority in heaven and earth, and I’m sharing it with you.” This time, however, there’s a unique difference in the authority God has given back to us as believers. It is joint authority between us and the Lord Jesus Christ. It’s no longer given to us solely as it was to Adam and Eve. They could give the authority away, allow the devil to oppress them, and basically be hopeless, but today our authority is shared with the Lord Jesus Christ. It’s like having a joint bank account that requires both signatures in order to cash a check. Our authority is shared with the Lord Jesus, and His authority is shared with the church.

Although we may fail, God is never again going to sign this authority over to the devil. Satan is absolutely powerless. He has no ability to do anything in your life except what he deceives you in and what you voluntarily yield to. You may give him authority in your life, you may suffer personally for it, but the God-given authority that was given to man will never again pass solely to the devil. It is now shared between us and the Lord Jesus, and He will remain faithful regardless. You need to recognize that you’re the one who now has authority and the power. Satan is fighting you with thoughts, and your weapons are such that you can take these thoughts captive. You can recognize that it’s wrong for the devil to oppress you physically and find out what the Scripture has to say about healing. John 8:32 says, “And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.” You can find out what the Scripture has to say about your prosperity and how to prosper—how to walk in the things of God. You’re the one who has power and authority. God has given it to you, and the only thing that keeps you from exercising it is that you haven’t yet taken your thoughts captive. You haven’t used these spiritual weapons to renew your mind and to realize what you have. It’s encouraging to find out that you’re one with authority and power.

I pray that you’ll take this, meditate on it, and God will give you the revelation that you’re the one Satan trembles at. You shouldn’t be trembling at Satan because you are the one who has God-given power and authority. The One who has already been to hell—defeated it—knocked the gates loose—and has the keys of death and hell dangling at his side now lives on the inside of you. You’re the one who has the authority. If you resist the devil, he will flee from you (James 4:7).

AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER (Outline)

Ephesians 6:11-12: “Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. ¹²For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.”

Satan does exist, but his only real power is deception.

Genesis 3:1: “Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden?”

Satan entered into a serpent, the most subtle animal God created. Adam and Eve were the ones with all the authority. Satan had no power to come against God. Satan used lies about God’s nature to cause Adam and Eve to sin against God. Satan has zero power, or authority, against us. His only power is in deception.

2 Corinthians 10:3-5, “For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh: ⁴(For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds): ⁵Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ.”

The weapons of our warfare are to deal with our thought life. Satan came with words to tempt and deceive Jesus.

Genesis 1:26: “And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth.”

God is the only one who has power in Himself. Everything else is delegated from Him.

Psalms 115:16: “The heaven, even the heavens, are the LORD’S: but the earth hath he given to the children of men.”

God has ownership of the earth by His right as Creator, but He gave rulership of it to physical human beings. Man yielded his God-given authority to Satan in the garden when Satan deceived him. Satan can only cause the problems he does because people have yielded their God-given authority to him. Satan, because he is a spirit being like God, needs to use a physical body to flow through. Only people who have a physical body have the authority to exercise influence on the earth. God couldn't find a man to flow through because they had all yielded themselves to Satan, so He Himself came as a man.

John 5:27: "And hath given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man."

Because God became a man in Jesus, it gave Him authority in the earth. Satan tempted Jesus, but Jesus never yielded to Him.

Matthew 28:18-19, "And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth. ¹⁹Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost."

All the authority that God had originally given to mankind was won back by Jesus. Then He shared that authority with us. In this joint authority, we may fail, but God will never sign His authority over to the devil. Jesus will remain faithful. YOU have authority and power. The only thing keeping it from being exercised in your life is that you haven't taken your thoughts captive to the truth.

James 4:7: "Submit yourselves therefore to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you."

Satan trembles at you because you are the one with the God-given authority. YOU resist the devil, and he will flee from you.

AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER (Teacher's Guide)

1.
 - A. Satan does exist, but his real power exists in his ability to deceive us. According to Genesis 3:1, what did the serpent (the devil) try to get Eve to question?

God's Word (Has God indeed said?).
 - B. Why did Satan use deception?

He could not make them disobey by force. He had to deceive them to give up their authority.

2. Who gave man authority according to Genesis 1:26, 28?

God.

3. How did God create man before the fall?

With dominion of the works of His (God's) hands.

4.
 - A. What does 2 Corinthians 4:4 indicate happened?

That Satan took man's authority and became god of the world.
 - B. Does Matthew 4:8-9 strengthen this point?

Yes.

5.
 - A. After Jesus' death and resurrection, who now has all authority in heaven and in earth?

Matthew 28:18—Jesus.
 - B. To whom has authority been delegated to according to Matthew 28:19?

The believer.

6. Ephesians 1:19 says that the exceeding greatness of God's power is toward whom?

To us who believe.

AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER (Detailed Teacher's Guide)

Note: The following information may be read out loud (a numbered section at a time) with the person(s) being disciplined. After each numbered section is read, pause and ask the question(s) that correspond to the paragraph(s), and then discuss them.

¹ Jesus had authority because of His humanity. God is a Spirit (John 4:24), and when He created this physical world and all of its inhabitants, He gave mankind authority to rule and subdue His creation (Genesis 1:26, 28; Psalms 8:4-8; 115:16). Although God still owned the universe and all that was in it (Exodus 9:29; Psalms 24:1; 89:11), He gave the control of the earth to man.

When man sinned, Satan usurped man's authority and became the god of this world (2 Corinthians 4:4). God did not ordain all the terrible things that have happened throughout history, and yet He did not take back authority to dominate the earth. Instead, He became a man (1 Timothy 3:16) and took back that authority to Himself by conquest. After Jesus' resurrection, He said in Matthew 28:18, "All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth," and then He gave the great commission to His disciples, thereby conferring that authority upon them also. Jesus becoming flesh was absolutely essential for gaining all power (or authority) in heaven and in earth.

² In Ephesians 1:19, this exceeding greatness of God's power is toward us. That means that it is for us and our benefit. Some people get glimpses of God's power, but very few have the revelation that it is for us and at our disposal. It doesn't do us any good to believe that God has power if we don't believe that it will work for us.

This great power of God is effectual only for those who believe. We must believe to receive, or if we doubt, we do without.

¹(a) What does Genesis 1:26, 28 tell us about man's authority?

(b) What does Psalm 8:6-8 tell us about man's authority?

(c) What is Satan called in 2 Corinthians 4:4?

²Ephesians 1:19 says the exceeding greatness of God's power is toward whom?

³The phrase “according to” in Ephesians 1:19 means “to the proportion or degree that” (see Ephesians 1:4). The point that is being made is that the power that every believer in Christ now has is the same power that God the Father used to raise Christ from the dead. We don’t just have a little bit of power from God. We have the same power that God used to raise Jesus from the dead. It is more than enough power to accomplish God’s will in our lives.

(Ephesians 1:21) The power that is now working in believers is the same power that worked in Christ to raise Him from the dead (Ephesians 1:20). Everything we have as believers in Christ comes from our union with Him. Therefore, what is true of Him is true of us too. So, in the same way that Jesus is now “above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion” so are we.

This is one of the greatest passages in the New Testament on the authority of the believer. In this passage we see that we have come to share in Christ’s throne, to partake in the authority that the throne represents, and to exercise divine power and dominion. There is no place in the New Testament that we are told to ask God to do something about the devil, but rather the church is told to do something about the devil. This is because delegated authority has been given to the church over the works of the enemy. Paul’s prayer is that the church may be enlightened to this truth.

⁴Paul also uses the analogy of the church being the body of Christ in his letter to the Corinthians (1 Corinthians. 12:12-27, and 15:25-28). He expounds on this in Ephesians 1:22-23 by placing Christ as the head and the church as the body. This is emphasizing the Lordship of Christ over the church just as the head dictates and controls the physical body.

When anything is placed under the feet of a person, then every single part of that person’s body is positioned above it. This illustrates that this resurrection power is not just a reality for Christ, our Head, but for every member of Christ’s body.

What an amazing statement we find here of our union with Christ Jesus. Paul states, “The church is Christ’s body, the completion of Him” (TEV). Just as a ship is not complete without its crew, just as a king is not complete without his kingdom, Jesus Christ has chosen to be incomplete without His church, “His body, filled with Himself. . .” (LB).

³(a) Compare Ephesians 1:19-21 with Ephesians 6:12. What do these verses show us? That we have authority over the devil.

(b) What does Mark 16:17 tell us to do about the devil?

(c) What does James 4:7 tell us to do about the devil?

⁴(a) If Christ is the head of the body, what does that imply? (Ephesians 1:22) That He is in control, we are His instrument. The head also contains the mind.

(b) According to Matthew 28:18-20, what is Jesus giving us authority to do?

AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER (Discipleship Questions)

Dominion: force, strength, might, power, authority, liberty of action, lordship.

Read Genesis 1:26-28

1. In whose likeness is man made?
2. What did God give us dominion over?
 - A. _____
 - B. _____
 - C. _____
 - D. _____
 - E. _____
3. "So God created man in His _____ image."
4. How did God bless man?
 - A. _____
 - B. _____
 - C. _____

Read Genesis 3:1

5. How is the serpent described in this verse?
6. What did the serpent (devil) try to get Eve to question?
7. What does Satan try to get us to question still today?
8. Why do you think Satan doesn't want you to believe the Word of God?

Read Psalm 8:6-8

9. What did God give man dominion over?
10. What did God put under man's feet?

Read Psalm 115:16

11. To whom does heaven belong?
12. What did God give to the children of men?

Read 2 Corinthians 4:3-4

13. To whom is the gospel veiled, or hidden from?
14. What has Satan, or the god of this age, done to their minds?

Read 2 Corinthians 3:16

15. What happens to the veil when someone turns to the Lord?

Read Ephesians 4:17-19 (AMP)

16. How are we commanded to no longer live?
17. If we choose to not turn to the Lord, what has happened to our understanding and reasoning?
A. _____ B. _____
18. Why are we alienated from the life of God?
A. _____
B. _____
19. What is the result of attaining “spiritual apathy” (AMP)?
20. Who is responsible for you being given over to lewdness, uncleanness, and greed?
21. “Who, being past feeling, have given _____ over to lewdness...”
22. Did the devil make you do it? Or You chose of your own free will?

Read Matthew 28:18-20

23. To whom has all authority in heaven and earth been given?
24. What has Christ commanded us to do?
25. Whose name are we to baptize them in? The name of _____, _____, and _____.
26. What are we to teach them?
27. What is the final promise at the end of verse 20?

Read Mark 16:15-18

28. In verses 17 and 18, we are told what we, as believers in Jesus Christ, have been given authority through Christ to do. List them.

- A. _____
- B. _____
- C. _____
- D. _____
- E. _____

29. In Whose name are we to do these things?

30. Does it say anything about our doing it in our own power?

Read Ephesians 1:17-21

31. What two things does Paul pray that we as believers might have (verse 17)?

- A. _____
- B. _____

32. Why does he pray that the eyes of our understanding would be enlightened? (v18-19)

- A. _____
- B. _____
- C. _____

33. In verse 19, Whose power is being talked about here?

34. Where is that power directed, toward those who believe or anybody? (circle one)

35. This same great power that is directed toward us is the same power that did what, according to verse 20?

- A. _____
- B. _____

36. God placed Jesus above all...(v21)

- A. _____ B. _____
- C. _____ D. _____
- E. _____

Read Ephesians 6:12-13

37. Compare this list of things we wrestle with the list of all that Jesus has been given authority of in number 36 above. Are they similar?

38. What are we commanded to do in verse 13?
39. Why are we to put on the full armor of God?
40. We are told to put on the full armor of God in order to STAND (not fall and be defeated) against the devil. Can you see that God has promised victory and protection for us from all evil if we will but believe and stand with His Son Jesus Christ?

Read James 4:7

41. What are we to do toward the devil?
42. If we resist him, what will he do?

Read Luke 10:19

43. What has Jesus given us the authority to do?

A. _____
B. _____

44. Shall anything hurt us?

Read Colossians 1:13

45. Has God delivered us already, or is it yet to come?
46. If we have already been delivered, and God has already defeated the devil, then all we must do is walk in His authority, which He gave to us. YES NO

Read Romans 8:16-17

47. Are we children of God?
48. Are we heirs of God?
49. If we are heirs of God, what are we with Jesus?
50. If we are joint-heirs with Jesus, does that mean we have access to all authority through Him?

51. Read Revelation 1:18
What does Jesus hold the keys to?

Read Colossians 2:15
52. What three things did Christ do to all principalities and powers?

- A. _____
- B. _____
- C. _____

Read 2 Timothy 1:7
53. What has God not given to us?

What has He given to us instead?

- A. _____
- B. _____
- C. _____

AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER
(Discipleship Questions)

1. God said "Let us make man in our image and after our likeness."
2. A. Fish
B. Birds
C. Cattle
D. Creeping things
E. All the earth
3. Own
4. A. Be fruitful and multiply
B. Fill the earth and subdue it
C. Have dominion over every living thing
5. As more cunning than any beast of the field
6. God's Word
7. God's Word
8. Because it is powerful and can destroy him
9. The works of His hands
10. All things
11. The Lord
12. The earth
13. Those who are perishing
14. Blinded them
15. It is taken away
16. In the futility of your mind
17. A. Darkened
B. Beclouded
18. A. Because of ignorance within us
B. Blindness of our hearts
19. To be given to lewdness to work all uncleanness with greediness
20. Myself
21. Themselves
22. Chose of own own free will
23. Jesus
24. Go and make disciples of all nations
25. Father, Son, and Holy Ghost
26. To observe all things Christ has commanded
27. He is with us always
28. A. Cast out demons
B. Speak with new tongues
C. Take up serpents
D. Divine protection
E. Heal the sick
29. Jesus'
30. No
31. A. The spirit of Wisdom
B. The spirit of Revelation
32. A. That you may know the hope of your calling
B. What are the riches of the glory of His inheritance.
C. The exceeding greatness of His power toward us

33. Jesus'
34. Toward those who believe
35. A. That raised Jesus from the dead
B. And seated Him at the right hand of God
36. A. Principalities
B. Power
C. Might
D. Dominion
E. Every name that is named
37. Yes
38. Take up the whole armor of God
39. To withstand in the evil day
40. Yes
41. Resist him
42. Flee from us
43. A. To trample on serpents and scorpions
B. And over all the power of the enemy
44. No
45. Delivered us already
46. Yes
47. Yes
48. Yes
49. Joint-Heirs
50. Yes
51. Of death and Hades (hell)
52. a. He disarmed them
b. He made a spectacle of them
c. He triumphed over them
53. A spirit of fear
54. A. Power
B. Love
C. Sound mind

AUTHORITY OF THE BELIEVER (Additional Information)

Ephesians 1:19-23: “And what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power, ²⁰Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places. ²¹Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come: ²²And hath put all things under his feet and gave him to be the head over all things to the church, ²³Which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all.”

(Ephesians 1:19-23) The power that is now working in believers is the same power that worked in Christ to raise Him from the dead. Everything we have as believers in Christ comes from our union with Him. Therefore, what is true of Him is true of us too. So, in the same way that Jesus is now “above all principality, and power, and might and dominion” so are we.

This is one of the greatest passages in the New Testament on the authority of the believer. In this passage we see that we have come to share in Christ’s throne, to partake in the authority that the throne represents, and to exercise divine power and dominion. There is no place in the New Testament that we are told to ask God to do something about the devil, but rather the church is told to do something about the devil. This is because delegated authority has been given to the church over the works of the enemy. Paul’s prayer is that the church may be enlightened to this truth.

In Acts 3:6 Peter said, “Such as I have give I thee.” Peter and John knew what they had. They had been given the power and ability of Jesus to heal. They didn’t just pray that Jesus would heal the man. They didn’t even pray! They just gave because it was theirs to give. Once we know God’s will we need to exercise our authority. The signs follow us (Mk. 16:17), we don’t need to be following the signs. Many people have desired the miraculous from God but have not received it because they didn’t know their authority in Christ, and didn’t exercise it.

In Matthew 28:18 Jesus said, “All power [authority] is given unto me in heaven and earth.” He then gave the great commission to His disciples, thereby conferring that authority upon them also.

HEALING IS IN THE ATONEMENT

Andrew Wommack

Today's session is about healing and how it is part of what Jesus has already purchased for us. This is a great follow-up to what I said about the authority God has given us. God has placed so much inside us, and the only thing that really hinders it from operating is our lack of knowledge. Hosea 4:6 says, "My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge," and John 8:32 says, "And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free." One of the truths you need to understand with regard to healing is that God has already purchased healing for everyone. Every person who has been born again has the healing power of God deposited inside them. You need to recognize that healing for a Christian is not an optional thing.

Let me share some scriptures with you about healing. In Mark 2 and Luke 5 Jesus was teaching in a house so crowded that a paralyzed man was let down through the roof by friends to where He sat, and Jesus miraculously healed him. In Matthew 8:14-16, after He had been healing people, it says, "And when Jesus was come into Peter's house, he saw his wife's mother laid, and sick of a fever. And he touched her hand, and the fever left her: and she arose, and ministered unto them. When the even was come, they brought unto him many that were possessed with devils: and he cast out the spirits with his word, and healed all that were sick." Then verse 17 is saying, "Here's the reason it happened": "That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, Himself took our infirmities, and bare our sicknesses." In this instance Jesus was healing many people, and it specifically refers back to and quotes from Isaiah 53:3-5: "He is despised and rejected of men [This is a prophecy about the Lord Jesus Christ]; a man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from him; he was despised, and we esteemed him not. Surely he hath born our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted. But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed."

These are powerful passages of Scripture. Some people take them and say, "Wait a minute; this is talking in a spiritual sense." The church I was brought up in didn't believe in physical healing for the body, but would take a scripture like this and spiritualize it—use it to say you were wounded emotionally and when you commit your life to the Lord, He heals you. But if you put this together with the passages we started with, it forever ends that application of these scriptures. It's true that Jesus will heal you emotionally and in other ways, but these scriptures are talking about physical healing for the body. You can see that because in Matthew 8:17 it says that these healings that took place were the fulfillment of the prophecy spoken by Isaiah we just read, "with his stripes we are healed." It says this was the fulfillment that He Himself took our infirmities and bore our sicknesses. This is talking about physical sicknesses, hurts, and pains. Jesus healed people physically to fulfill the scripture that says we are healed by His stripes.

The Bible goes on to say in 1 Peter 2:24, "Who his own self bare our sins in his own body, on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by whose stripes ye were healed." This is in the past tense. Jesus came, and part of what He came to do was heal your physical bodies. I am not diminishing the fact that He also came to forgive your sins. That's important, and forgiveness of sins is like the doorway, the entrance to everything else, but He didn't come only to forgive your

sins. He also came to heal your body. In Greek, the word used for salvation in the New Testament is “sozo,” an all-encompassing word that applies to many different things. But if you look it up, it’s also translated “healed.” James 5:14 states, “Is any sick among you? let them call for the elders of the church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the name of the Lord; And prayer of faith shall save the sick.” The word “save” there is the Greek word “sozo,” and it is talking about the sick being physically healed in their bodies. This same word that was translated forgiveness of sins hundreds of times in the New Testament was also translated healed.

Jesus died not only for the forgiveness of your sins but also for the healing of your body. His healing power has now been deposited and placed inside you through the new birth. In Ephesians 1:18-20, Paul’s prays that the eyes of your understanding would be enlightened. He prays that you would see what is the hope of your calling and the exceeding greatness of His power toward us who believe—the same power God used when He raised Jesus Christ from the dead and set Him at His own right hand in the heavenly places.

Did you know that the same power it took to raise Jesus from the dead is now living inside you? The same power that quickened His physical body and made him come alive is the same life-giving power that is inside you, and it’s yours. That’s the authority you have as a believer—authority over sickness. When Jesus sent His disciples out in Matthew 10, the command He gave them was to heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils, and preach the Gospel. In the same breath that He told them to preach the Gospel, He told them to heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, and cast out devils. Healing is just as much a part of what Jesus came to accomplish in your life as forgiveness of sins

In the same way you would never think that the Lord would want you to commit a sin to teach you that you could learn something through your sin, He would never want you to live in sickness. God is not the author of sickness in your life. Sometimes people say things like, “Well, this sickness is really a blessing from God, because it turned me to Him.” It’s true that in crisis situations people turn to God, but He doesn’t send sickness to teach you. He wouldn’t do that anymore than He would put sin on you. Can you learn something if you go live in sin? If you live a life of adultery or homosexuality and get some disease, can you learn that the lifestyle was wrong? Certainly you can, but God didn’t cause you to live that lifestyle. He didn’t put sin in your life, yet you can learn from sinning. You can beat your head against the wall and learn that it’s not the thing to do, but you could also learn that without physically beating your head against the wall. You don’t have to learn everything by hard knocks. God does not put sickness in your life to humble you and teach you something. Jesus died to forgive you of your sins and also to heal you of your diseases. He bore our sins in His own Body, and by His stripes we were healed. Past tense . . . you’ve already been healed.

Someone might say, “Well, if I were healed, why do I still have this physical sickness?” Because it’s by the renewing of your mind as you operate in faith that you draw this life out of you. If you believe that sickness is normal, your lot in life, and passively submit to it and embrace it, then it can have dominion over you. But you can walk in supernatural divine health. I’m not a perfect example—no human being is. I haven’t arrived, but I’ve left, and I can tell you that for the last thirty years I’ve been walking in a measure of divine health that is far beyond what I would have thought possible thirty years ago. God’s healing has been flowing in my body. I haven’t had to take an aspirin or any type of medication for over thirty years. There’ve been a few times that Satan has attacked my body, but it lasted a matter of hours, maximum of a day,

rather than weeks or months.

God's supernatural divine healing is available to all of us. I've been healed of incurable diseases and have the doctors' reports to prove it. I've seen blind eyes and deaf ears opened. I've seen all the things that are spoken about in the Word of God come to pass. We've even seen people raised from the dead. We had the sheriff in a little town in Colorado present to witness a man who had been dead for 15 minutes being raised from the dead. These things are for us today. Jesus has already provided it. Healing is part of the atonement that Jesus died to produce.

If you aren't receiving your healing, God's not upset with you. You don't have to be healed to love God. You can love God with your whole heart, not believe in healing, and still go to heaven. As a matter of fact, you'll probably get there quicker because you don't know how to walk in health. But you know what—it's available to you. Jesus died to produce it. God wants you to walk in His supernatural health, so I challenge you today to take the Scriptures, begin to study them, and find out that God has provided healing for you. Believe it, renew your mind, let that life—that same power that raised Jesus from the dead—flow into your physical body, and you'll experience the resurrection power of the Lord Jesus Christ in the physical realm.

HEALING IS IN THE ATONEMENT (Outline)

God has already purchased healing for every person. Every person who is born again has had the healing power of God deposited on the inside of them.

Matthew 8:16-17, “When the even was come, they brought unto him many that were possessed with devils: and he cast out the spirits with his word, and healed all that were sick: ¹⁷That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, Himself took our infirmities, and bare our sicknesses.”

Isaiah 53:4-5, “Surely he hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted. ⁵But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed.”

Jesus healed people physically to fulfill the scripture that, “with his stripes we are healed.”

1 Peter 2:24, “Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by whose stripes ye were healed.”

Part of what Jesus came to do was heal your physical body.

“SOZO,” the Greek word for salvation in the New Testament, means “healed” as well as forgiveness of sins.

Ephesians 1:19-20, “And what is the exceeding greatness of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power, ²⁰Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places.”

The same power that it took to raise Jesus from the dead is living on the inside of you.

Matthew 10:1, “And when he had called unto him his twelve disciples, he gave them power against unclean spirits, to cast them out, and to heal all manner of sickness and all manner of disease.”

Jesus commanded His disciples to heal the sick. You have authority over sickness. Healing is just as much a part of what Jesus came to accomplish in your life as forgiveness of sins.

God never wants you to live in sickness. He is not the author of it. God does not put sickness in your life to humble you and teach you something.

You have to draw the life-giving power of God out of you through faith to walk in supernatural, divine health. If you passively submit to sickness in your life, it can have dominion over you.

HEALING IS IN THE ATONEMENT (Teacher's Guide)

1. According to Matthew 8:14-17, how many people did Jesus heal?
All that came to him.
2. A. According to Isaiah 53:3-5, what type of healing are these verses talking about?
Physical healing.
B. What happened to sickness and infirmity according to Matthew 8:17?
Jesus bore them.
3. What two things does 1 Peter 2:24 say that Jesus did for us?
He bore our sins in His body and took stripes for our healing.
4. Read James 5:14-15. The word "saved" in verse 15 is the Greek word "SOZO," which is translated "to deliver, protect, heal, preserve, be whole." It's the same word the Bible refers to as salvation. So according to these verses and the Greek definition of salvation, what is included with your salvation?
Healing.
5. A. When Jesus sent out His disciples in Matthew 10:7-8, what did He tell them to say?
The kingdom of heaven is at hand.
B. What actions proved that they were sent by Jesus?
They healed the sick and cast out devils.

6. A. What did Jesus proclaim to His disciples to do in Mark 16:15-20?

To preach the Gospel.

B. In verse 16, what did He say will happen?

People will believe, be baptized, and be saved.

C. In verse 17, what did He say will happen?

They will cast out devils and speak with tongues.

D. In verse 18, what did He say will happen?

More signs and wonders will follow: They shall lay hands on the sick and they shall recover.

HEALING IS IN THE ATONEMENT (Detailed Teacher's Guide)

Note: The following information may be read out loud (a numbered section at a time) with the person(s) being disciplined. After each numbered section is read, pause and ask the question(s) that correspond to the paragraph(s), and then discuss them.

¹ There will always be individual situations where good people are not healed, but does that mean it wasn't God's will to heal them? Certainly not! 2 Peter 3:9 says, "The Lord is . . . not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance." This scripture leaves no doubt that it is the Lord's will for everyone to be saved, but will there be good people who are not saved? Certainly! There will be millions of good people who attend church and lead good lives, but will perish because they trusted in themselves, just as the Pharisees of Jesus' day did. Likewise, not everyone God wills to be healed will be healed.

² So, for a variety of reasons, none of which are God's fault, not everyone who desires salvation gets saved. Likewise, not everyone who desires healing gets healed. We can't let sympathy and personal experience form our doctrine, and then go to God's Word to try and prove what we already believe. We have to make the decision Paul made in Romans 3:4, when he said, "let God be true, but every man a liar." We need to reckon God's Word to be true and our own experiences, our own opinions, a lie.

³ What does God's Word say? The Scriptures teach that Jesus paid for our healing in His atonement the same way He paid for our sins. In the same way that God would never make us sin, He would never make us sick. Sickness and sin are both covered in the atoning work of Christ.

⁴ The very word "saved," or "salvation," in the Greek means "healing" as well as forgiveness of sins. They are synonymous. The Greek word is "sozo," and it was translated "made whole" in reference to healing in Matthew 9:22, Mark 5:34, and Luke 8:48. This same Greek word was used in James 5:15, where James said, "And the prayer of faith shall save the sick." Healing is mentioned as a benefit of our salvation in the same sentence as forgiveness of sins in Psalms 103:3, Isaiah 53:4-6, and 1 Peter 2:24.

¹ (a) According to 2 Peter 3:9, is it God's will for any to perish?

(b) According to Matthew 25:46, will some people perish?

² What does Romans 3:4 reveal about our own opinions?

³ What are the benefits of the Lord described in Psalms 103:2-3?

⁴ How is the word "save" used in James 5:13-15?

⁵ Isaiah 53:4-5 gives a very clear presentation that Jesus bore our sickness and disease, just as He bore our sins. “Surely he hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted. ⁵But he [was] wounded for our transgressions, [he was] bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace [was] upon him; and with his stripes we are healed” (Isaiah 53:4-5). The Hebrew words for “wounded” and “bruised” refer to Jesus bearing our pains and sicknesses. By His stripes we were physically healed (1 Peter 2:24). You don’t have to be a Hebrew scholar to know that.

In the New Testament, Matthew quoted Isaiah in reference to Jesus healing everyone present. Matthew said, “That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the prophet, saying, Himself took our infirmities, and bare [our] sickness” (Matthew 8:17). So New Testament Scripture provides a commentary on Old Testament Scripture. There is no doubt that Isaiah was speaking of physical infirmities and sickness. Healing is part of Jesus’ atonement.

⁶ Jesus’ life provides one of the strongest arguments that it is God’s will to heal everyone. Jesus said in John 5:19, “Verily, verily, I say unto you, the Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise.” There are 17 different times in the Gospels where Jesus healed all of the sick that were present. There are 47 other times where Jesus healed one or two people at a time. There are no instances where Jesus refused to heal anyone or where Jesus put a sickness on anyone. Therefore, in light of the statement that He did everything His Father did, we can conclude that God is not the one bringing sickness into our lives. When Peter preached the Gospel to Cornelius in Acts 10, he said, “God anointed Jesus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghost and with power: who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppressed of the devil; for God was with him” (Acts 10:38). Notice that Jesus healed all that were oppressed of the devil.

⁷ The Apostle John told his beloved Gaius in 3 John 2, “Beloved, I wish above all things that thou mayest prosper and be in health, even as thy soul prospereth.” That’s God’s will for every one of us.

⁵How does Matthew 8:17 interpret Isaiah 53:4-5?

⁶How does Luke 13:11-16 show that sickness is from the devil?

⁷What does 3 John 2 reveal about God’s will for us?

HEALING IS IN THE ATONEMENT
(Discipleship Questions)

Read Matthew 8:16-17

1. With what did Jesus cast out the evil spirits?
2. How many did He heal who were sick?
3. What did Isaiah prophesy about in verse 17?

Chastisement: reproof, warning, correction, discipline, instruction, reform, punish

Read Isaiah 53:4-5

4. What has Christ borne and carried for us?
A. _____
B. _____
5. For what was He wounded and bruised?
A. _____
B. _____
6. Did Jesus carry the blame for us regarding our iniquities?
7. "And by His stripes we are _____."

Read 1 Peter 2:24

8. Where did Christ bare our sins?
9. Since we have died to sin, what might we live for now?
10. "By whose stripes you were _____."
11. Is your healing something you have to work for or just receive?

Read Matthew 10:1

12. What did Jesus give His disciples power over?
13. What did Jesus give His disciples the power to do?
A. _____
B. _____

Read Hebrews 6:1-2

14. What are the elementary principles of Christ as described in these verses?

- A. _____
- B. _____
- C. _____
- D. _____
- E. _____
- F. _____

15. Do you recognize how “raising the dead” was an “elementary principle”?

16. Would you consider being risen from the dead a total healing?

Read James 5:14-15

17. What must you do if you are sick?

- A. _____
- B. _____
- C. _____

18. What will save the sick, according to verse 15?

19. What will also be forgiven you?

Read Mark 16:15-18

20. At the end of verse 18, does it say “if we lay hands on the sick they might recover?”

21. Rewrite this verse as it is written in the Word.

Read 2 Peter 3:9

22. Is the Lord slack concerning His promises?

23. Is it God’s will that any should perish?

Read John 3:16-17

24. Why did God give His only Son?

25. If it’s not God’s will for us to perish, what is His will?

26. If Christ was not sent to condemn the world, why was He sent?

Saved: to deliver, protect, heal, preserve, be made whole

Read Romans 3:4

- 27. What does this verse say about the opinions of man?
- 28. Even though we might feel sick, if God's Word says we are healed, whom do we believe?

Read Psalm 103:3-5

- 29. List all the benefits from these verses.
 - A. _____
 - B. _____
 - C. _____
 - D. _____
 - E. _____

- 30. Did it say He would heal only some of your diseases?
- 31. How many of our diseases has Christ healed?

Read Psalm 107:19-20

- 32. What did the Lord do when the people cried out to Him in their trouble?
- 33. What did He send to them to heal them?
- 34. What else did He deliver them from?

Read Luke 13:11-13

- 35. What was this woman's infirmity described as?
- 36. What did Jesus speak over the woman?
- 37. If He loosed her from a spirit of infirmity, do you recognize that it was an evil spirit?
- 38. What happened to the woman when Jesus laid His hands on her?

Read 3 John 2

- 39. In how many areas of our lives should we prosper?
- 40. Does that include our health?

Read Jeremiah 30:17

- 41. What did God promise His people in this verse?
 - A. _____
 - B. _____

Read Mark 11:22-24

42. What are we commanded to have in verse 22?
43. What are we to say to the mountain?
44. What is the final result if we believe that whatever we say, or command, to our “mountain”?
45. “Therefore, I say to you, _____ things you ask when you pray, _____ that you _____ them and you _____ have them.”

Read Psalm 91:5-6, 9-10

46. What are we to not be afraid of in verses 5-6?
 - A. _____
 - B. _____
 - C. _____
 - D. _____
47. What are we promised because we have made the Lord as our refuge and dwelling place?
 - A. _____
 - B. _____

Read Matthew 6:10

48. Is there sickness in heaven?
49. What did Christ pray would happen on earth?

Read Proverbs 3:5-8

50. With what are we to trust in the Lord?
51. What we not to lean on?
52. If we acknowledge Him in all our ways, what will God do for us?
53. What’s another word to use for “not being wise in our own eyes”?
54. If we humble ourselves, and fear the Lord and depart from evil, what will the result be to our bones and flesh?

Read Romans 4:20-21, 24

55. What was the assurance of the promise in these verses?
56. What must you do to receive the promise?

HEALING IS IN THE ATONEMENT
(Discipleship Answer Key)

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. With a word | 17. A. Call the elders
B. Let them pray over you
C. Be anointed with oil |
| 2. All who were sick | |
| 3. That Christ Himself took our infirmities
and bore our sicknesses | 18. The prayer of faith |
| 4. A. Griefs
B. Sorrows | 19. My sins |
| 5. A. Transgressions
B. Iniquities | 20. No |
| 6. Yes | 21. They will lay hands on sick, and they will
recover |
| 7. Healed | 22. No |
| 8. In His own body | 23. No |
| 9. For righteousness | 24. So that we would not perish |
| 10. Healed | 25. For everyone to have everlasting life |
| 11. Just receive | 26. That the world through Him might be saved |
| 12. Unclean spirits | 27. Everyman is a liar |
| 13. A. Cast them out
B. Heal all kinds of sickness and disease | 28. God's Word |
| 14. A. Repentance from dead works
B. Faith toward God
C. Doctrine of Baptisms
D. Laying on of hands
E. Resurrection of the dead
F. Eternal judgment | 29. A. Forgives all our iniquities
B. Heals all our diseases
C. Redeems our life from destruction
D. Crowns us with loving kindness and tender
mercies
E. Satisfies our mouths with good things |
| 15. Yes | 30. No |
| 16. Yes | 31. All |
| | 32. He saved them from their distresses |
| | 33. His Word |
| | 34. Their destructions |

35. A spirit
36. "You are loosed"
37. Yes
38. She was made straight, then glorified God
39. All
40. Yes
41. A. Restoration of health
B. Healing all of our wounds
42. Have faith in God
43. Be removed and cast into the sea
44. It will be done
45. Whatever – believe – receive – will
46. A. Terror by night
B. Arrow that flies by day
C. Pestilence that walks in darkness
D. Destruction that lays waste at noonday
47. A. No evil shall befall you
B. Nor any plague come near your dwelling
48. place
49. No
50. The same that is in heaven
51. With all my heart
52. Our own understanding
53. Direct our paths
54. Proudful
55. Health and strength
56. That God will perform it
57. Believe

HEALING IS IN THE ATONEMENT (Additional Information)

(Matthew 8:16) There are seventeen times in the Gospels where Jesus healed all of the sick who were present (Matthew 4:23-24, 8:16-17, 9:35, 12:15, 14:14, 34-36, 15:30-31, 19:2, 21:14, Mark 1:32-34,39, 6:56, Luke 4:40, 6:17-19, 7:21, 9:11, and 17:12-17). There are forty-seven other times where He healed one or two people at a time (Matthew 8:1-4, 5-13, 14-15, 28-34, 9:1-8, 20-33, 12:10-13, 22-23, 15:21-28, 17:14-18, 20:30-34, Mark 1:21-31, 40-45, 2:1-12, 3:1-5, 5:1-20, 25-43, 7:24-37, 8:22-26, 9:14-29, 10:46-52, Luke 4:33-39, 5:12-15, 17-26, 6:6-10, 7:1-17, 8:27-39, 43-56, 9:37-42, 11:14, 13:11-17, 14:1-4, 18:35-43, 22:51, John 4:46-54, 5:2-15, 9:6-7, and 11:43-44). Nowhere do we find Jesus refusing to heal anyone. In light of Jesus' statement that He could do nothing of Himself but only what He saw the Father do (John 5:19 and 8:28-29), His actions are proof enough that it is always God's will to heal.

Healing has been purchased for us as part of the atonement of Christ. The Lord would no more refuse to heal us than He would refuse to forgive us. That does not mean that we deserve healing—we don't. It is a gift of God just as salvation is a gift of God (Romans 6:23, and Ephesians 2:8). We don't deserve to have our sins forgiven. We cannot demand salvation from the Lord; but we can expect it. Likewise, healing has been purchased for us through the atonement of Christ. Healing belongs to us, but it is still the mercy of God that has provided healing, and every act of healing is an act of mercy.

(Matthew 8:17) The fact that this verse substitutes "infirmities" and "sicknesses" for the words "sorrows" and "griefs" in Isaiah 53:4 makes it clear that when Isaiah said, "with his stripes we are healed" (Isaiah 53:5), he was speaking of the physical healing of our bodies. Jesus provided for physical healing as well as forgiveness of sins. The very word "save" is translated "made whole" in reference to physical healing in Matthew 9:22, Mark 5:34, and Luke 8:48. James 5:15 says, "the prayer of faith shall save the sick." Many scriptures mention the healing of our bodies in conjunction with the forgiveness of our sins. Examples are Psalm 103:3; Isaiah 53:4-6; and 1 Peter 2:24. Healing is a part of our salvation just as much as the forgiveness of our sins.

HINDRANCES TO HEALING

Andrew Wommack

In our previous lesson I talked about the fact that it is God's will to heal, and that healing is part of the atonement. Much more could be said, because even if you accept it and have seen it in the Scriptures, it still raises a lot of questions such as, "if it's God's will to heal us, why isn't everyone healed?" There are many reasons, and I'm just scratching the surface on the things I know. I have two tapes entitled "Reasons People Are Not Healed, Part 1 and Part 2" that you might want to get. You can call our Helpline in Colorado at (719) 635-1111 and request these tapes. There is a lot of information that I simply am not able to get into here, but I want to address part of why people are not healed if it's God's will to heal. One of the reasons is ignorance. You cannot operate in something you don't know or understand, and in my own life that certainly was true.

I was trained to believe God's will automatically came to pass, that I had no authority, power, or say-so in it. So through my ignorance, a number of things happened. My dad died when I was twelve years old and two or three people had died in my presence by the time I was twenty-one. I was praying for all of them to be healed, but I didn't see healing manifest, not because it wasn't God's will, but because of ignorance on my part. Ignorance is a reason why things happen, but it's not an excuse. It's like the law of gravity: a person could say, "Well, I didn't realize that if I walked off a ten-story building it was going to kill me." You don't have to realize it to have the full impact of that law to work against you. People are ignorant about some of God's laws. They don't know how His healing system works, so ignorance is killing a lot of people.

Another thing that can hinder us from receiving healing is sin. It really upsets people when you say that because they interpret what you are saying as all sickness is a result of some sin on our part, which is not true. That's not what I'm saying. In John 9, there was an instance where Jesus was coming out of the temple, and His disciples pointed out a man there who was born blind. His disciples said in verse 2, "Master, who did sin, this man, or his parents, that he was born blind?" In other words, they were trying to relate his sickness directly to sin, and saying was it his sin or, since he was born blind was it his parents that caused this sickness to come on him? Jesus' answer was that neither of them had sinned. That's not saying that the parents nor the son had never sinned but that it wasn't their sin that directly caused his blindness. It's untrue to say that all sickness is related to sin, but it's also untrue to say that sin is not one of the factors.

In John 5 there is an instance when Jesus was at the pool of Bethesda, and He healed a man supernaturally. There were multitudes in that place, and only one person was healed. Later the chapter shows the man didn't know who healed him when the Jews asked him in verse 12, "What man is that which said unto thee, Take up thy bed, and walk?" Verses 13-14 continue, "And he that was healed wist [knew] not who it was: for Jesus had conveyed himself away, a multitude being in that place, Afterward Jesus findeth him in the temple, and said unto him, Behold, thou art made whole: sin no more, lest a worse thing come unto thee." Jesus said right here that sin would cause something worse than his paralysis to come upon him. He tied the result of sickness to sin. He also said in John 9 that it wasn't because of anybody's sin that the man was born blind.

Some things just happen naturally, but there are times when sickness, disease, or problems can be a direct result of sin. Even in such cases, it doesn't mean God is the one who is doing these things to us. Take, for instance, a person who lives a homosexual lifestyle, which is a perversion of nature. The human body is not made to live that way. Sexually communicated diseases come from that lifestyle. God is not the author of these diseases—it's just nature rebelling because it's not set up to live that way. For instance, if you go out and eat the wrong food, your body will respond, and it's not God doing it to you. There are natural laws, natural factors here. So it is true that sin can be one of the reasons people aren't healed.

If there's a known sin in your life, and you are believing God for healing, you need to stop the sin, because through it you are giving Satan a direct access that's hindering you from receiving what God is doing in your life. Romans 6:16 says, "Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servant ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?" That's not saying that Satan becomes master in the sense that you lose your salvation and go to hell, but it means that whether you are a Christian or not—if you're out living in sin—you're giving Satan an inroad into your life. John 10:10 says that the thief comes for no other purpose except to steal, to kill, and to destroy, but Jesus came to give you life. So we've got Jesus trying to bring His life and health into you, but we've also got Satan trying to make you sick. If through sin you're yielding yourself to Satan, you are empowering him and giving him an opportunity in your life. You can pray and ask God for healing all you want to, but your actions are allowing the devil to come in and bring sickness. So, if you are living in sin, you need to stop it.

I need to add that you could become so introspective that you would say, "Well, I'm always less than what I should be," and get to a place where even though you believe God can heal, you believe He won't because you don't deserve it. That certainly is wrong, too. None of us are ever going to obtain healing from God because we deserve it. God's never had anyone qualified working for Him yet, so you don't need to associate God moving in you life only to your performance—your holiness. It needs to be based on what Jesus has done for you and your faith in Him. At the same time, you can't ignore your actions and yield yourself to the devil without him hindering you. You'll see healing work much easier, much better, in your life if you repent and quit anything you're doing that would give Satan an inroad into your life.

Another factor that concerns healing that some people don't think much about is the negativity and unbelief of other people can affect you. One of the classic examples of this is in Mark 6 where Jesus was in His hometown, and the people didn't respect Him because they remembered Him as a little boy. They knew His father and mother, brothers and sisters, and didn't respect Him the way some people did. They came against him and criticized Him, and Mark 6:4-6 says, "A prophet is not without honour, but in his own country, and among his own kin, and in his own house. And he could there do no mighty work, save that he laid his hands upon a few sick folk, and healed them. And he marvelled because of their unbelief." This doesn't say that Jesus wouldn't, but that He couldn't do any mighty works. Here is Jesus, the sinless Son of God, who came to earth as a man, who had no lack in His faith, and there certainly wasn't any inroad of sin in His life, yet He was limited to what He could do for other people because of their unbelief. Put this together with Matthew 13:58, where it says, "And he did not many mighty works there because of their unbelief" and we see that Jesus, who had no limitations in Himself and certainly no sin in His life to give Satan an inroad, was limited in what He could do because of the people around Him.

This is really important to understand that I'm saying it is God's will to heal everyone all of the time. If you believe that, you might possibly make the mistake of going to a hospital and trying to empty it of every sick person because you believe it's God's will for them to be healed. It is God's will for them to be healed, but He will not move against their own will. God will protect your right to be sick, your right not to be healed. No one can force you to be healed—you can't get healed off of someone else's faith. Their faith can help you if you're struggling, but they can't do it for you. You can push a car when it's in neutral, but you can't push a car in park or reverse. If a person is set against healing, you cannot overcome it. Because of this, you can't empty a hospital or go into a church service and see every person healed without their cooperation.

There's so much more that could be said about this. When Jesus healed people, even raising the dead, he would go up to someone and say, "Weep not." He would tell a mother not to weep and then raise her son from the dead. Somebody's faith has to be used somewhere. There needs to be faith on our part, and there are so many, many other things involved in healing. I've discussed just a few here today, and hopefully they will help you, but one of the main things you need to get out of this is that God is faithful. It is His will for you to be healed, but you have to learn how to cooperate with Him. He can't do it for you; He has to do it through you. It will come from the inside of you.

I pray that these things will help you to start yielding yourself, allow the power of God to flow through you, and walk in His supernatural divine health.

HINDRANCES TO HEALING (Outline)

Healing is God's will, but not everyone is healed. God's will doesn't automatically come to pass. We have to exercise our authority and the power in His Word.

Ignorance can be a reason, but not an excuse for people not being healed. You can't operate in something you don't know or understand.

John 5:14, "Afterward Jesus findeth him in the temple, and said unto him, Behold, thou art made whole: sin no more, lest a worse thing come unto thee."

Sin can hinder you from receiving your healing. Jesus tied the result of sickness to sin. Sometimes sickness, disease, and problems can be a direct result of sin. However, this doesn't mean that God is the author of them.

Romans 6:16, "Know ye not, that to whom ye yield yourselves servants to obey, his servants ye are to whom ye obey; whether of sin unto death, or of obedience unto righteousness?"

Whether you are a Christian or not, if you are living in sin, you are giving Satan an inroad into your life.

John 9:1-3, "And as Jesus passed by, he saw a man which was blind from his birth. ²And his disciples asked him, saying, Master, who did sin, this man, or his parents, that he was born blind? ³Jesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents: but that the works of God should be made manifest in him."

It's untrue to say that all sickness is related to sin. Some things happen just naturally.

John 10:10, "The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly."

Jesus is trying to bring His life and health to us and Satan is trying to make us sick. If, through sin, we are yielding ourselves to Satan, then we are empowering him. By our actions, we are allowing the devil to come in and bring sickness upon us.

If there is some known sin in our lives, and we are believing God for a healing, we need to stop sinning and repent because through sin we are hindering our receiving what God is doing in our lives.

It is wrong however, to believe that God won't heal you because you don't deserve it. God's activity in our lives isn't based on our performance or our holiness, but on what Jesus has done for us, and our faith in Him. You'll see healing work more quickly and easier when you quit anything that gives Satan an inroad into your life.

Matthew 13:58, "And he did not many mighty works there because of their unbelief."

The unbelief of people around you can affect you receiving your healing.

God will not move against a person's will. You can have someone else's faith help you, but you cannot get healed just on someone else's faith alone.

God is faithful. It's His will for us to be healed, but we have to learn to cooperate with Him.

HINDRANCES TO HEALING (Teacher's Guide)

STATEMENT: In our previous lesson, we learned that it's God's will to heal us. If this is the truth, then why isn't everyone healed? We'll try to answer that question in this lesson.

1. A. According to the instructor on the video, do you remember the first reason why people aren't healed?

 Ignorance - not knowing what the Bible teaches about healing.
- B. Ignorance is not an excuse because we have God's Word to teach us. What was the next hindrance to healing?

 Sin.
2. A. According to John 9:1-3, what did the disciples think caused this man's blindness?

 Sin.
- B. According to Jesus, was their idea correct?

 No.
3. According to John 5:14, what could sin produce in someone's life?

 Sickness and even worse things.
4. A According to Romans 6:16, what happens to someone who continues in sin?

 He comes into slavery.
- B. What is the devil's goal according to John 10:10?

 To steal, kill and destroy.
5. What inhibited the people from being healed according to Mark 6:1-6?

 Their unbelief.

HINDRANCES TO HEALING (Detailed Teacher's Guide)

Note: The following information may be read out loud (a numbered section at a time) with the person(s) being disciplined. After each numbered section is read, pause and ask the question(s) that correspond to the paragraph(s), and then discuss them.

¹ In our previous lesson, I talked about the truth that it's God's will to heal—that it's a part of the atonement. And there is, of course, much, much more that could be said about that, but suppose you've accepted this and you've seen it in the Scriptures, let us now discuss why some people don't receive healing. If it's God's will to heal us, then why isn't everyone healed?

I was raised to believe that God's will just automatically comes to pass and that I don't have any authority, power or say so in it. So, through my ignorance, a number of things happened. My dad died when I was twelve years old. I was with two or three people when they died (in their presence) by the time I was twenty-one. I was praying for all of them to be healed. I didn't see that healing manifest—not because it wasn't God's will, but through my ignorance.

There are some laws in the things of God that people are ignorant about. They don't know how God's healing system works. Ignorance is killing a lot of people.

² Another thing that hinders people from receiving their healing is sin. This really upsets people when you say this because they interpret it as all sickness is because of some sin of theirs. That is not true. That's not what I'm saying. In John chapter 9, there is an instance where Jesus was coming out of the temple and his disciples pointed out a man who was there who had been blind from birth. The disciples said, "Master, who did sin, this man, or his parents, that he was born blind?" In other words, they were trying to relate his sickness directly to sin saying, "was he was born blind because of his sin or was it his parents sin that caused this sickness to come on him?" Jesus' answer was that neither of them had sinned. Of course, that's not saying that the parents or the child had never sinned, but He was saying that it was not their sin that directly caused this blindness.

It's untrue to say that all sickness is related to sin, but it's also untrue to say that sin is not one of the factors.

¹How can we correct ignorance? Romans 10:2-3, 17

²How does James 5:13 - 16 show us that sin is sometimes related to sickness?

³ If a person goes out and lives a homosexual lifestyle, that's a perversion of nature and the human body is not made to live that way. Some sexually communicated diseases come out of this life style. This is not to say that God is the author of these—it's just nature rebelling. Nature is not created to support this life style. It is similar to a person who goes out and eats the wrong food. If you eat poison, your body will respond negatively to it. It's not God who is doing it to you. There are natural laws—natural factors.

⁴ None of us are ever going to be able to obtain healing from God because we deserve it. God has never had anybody qualified working for Him yet. So, you must not associate God moving in your life with your performance—your holiness. It needs to be based on what Jesus has done for you and your faith in Him. At the same time, you cannot ignore your actions and yield yourself to the devil without him hindering you.

⁵ Another factor that concerns our healing, that people don't think about, is that of the unbelief of people around us.

⁶ It is God's will to heal, but do you know that God will not move against a person's own will? God will protect your right to be sick. You can't push a car that's in park or reverse. If a person is set against healing, it cannot be overcome.

⁷ Every time Jesus healed people there was faith present—even when they were dead—He would go up to someone and say, "Weep not." He told the mother not to weep and then He raised her son from the dead. Somebody's faith has to be used somewhere. There needs to be faith on our part.

³ How does Romans 8:22-23 show us there are natural laws set in motion by Adam's transgression?

⁴ (a) Who did Jesus heal? Acts 10:38.

(b) What is our part? James 4:7

(c) What was Jesus' part? Matthew 8:16-17

⁵ What do we learn about unbelief and healing from Mark 6:5-6?

⁶ Signs will follow what kind of people? Mark 16:17

⁷ What will save the sick according to James 5:15?

HINDRANCES TO HEALING (Discipleship Questions)

Read Hosea 4:6

1. Why do people perish?

Read 1 Corinthians 1:18-21

2. To whom is the message of the cross foolishness?
3. What is it “to us who are being saved”?
4. What will God destroy and bring to nothing in verse 19?
A. _____
B. _____
5. Whose wisdom will be destroyed? (v 20)
6. “The world through [their own] wisdom did not know _____.”
7. What pleased God?
8. What did the people have to do to be saved?

Read 1 Corinthians 2:14

9. What doesn't the natural man receive?
10. Why?
11. Why can't he know them?

Read Ephesians 4:17-18

12. How should we no longer walk?
13. If you continue to walk in the vanity of your mind what two things happen?
A. _____
B. _____
14. Why do those two results occur?
A. _____
B. _____

Read John 5:14-15

15. After Jesus healed the lame man what did He command him to do?
16. Why did Jesus tell him to sin no more?
17. What was the man's testimony as to Who had healed him?

Read Romans 6:16

18. How do we know whose slave we are?
19. If we are slaves to sin where does that lead us?
20. If we are obedient to God?

Read John 9:1-3

21. What did the disciples think caused this man's blindness?
22. Was it the sins of his parents or his own sin that caused the blindness?
23. What was the explanation Jesus gave?

Read John 10:10

24. What is Satan's purpose for being here?
 - A. _____
 - B. _____
 - C. _____
25. Can you see how he will use sickness and disease to try and accomplish that purpose?
26. Why did Jesus come?
27. Can you see from this verse that God does not cause sickness to teach us something, because it would go against His divine purpose?

Read Matthew 13:53-58

28. Why were the people of Nazareth offended at Jesus?
29. What did Jesus say about Himself in verse 57?
30. Why couldn't Jesus do many mighty works in His hometown?

Read Mark 2:16-17

31. Who has need of a physician?
32. In His example, who was sick? The righteous the sinner (circle one)

Read Hebrews 3:12-15

33. What are we warned not to have?
34. What should we do for one another daily?

Exhort: to beseech, to admonish, to urge one to pursue some course of conduct, to recommend, advise, warn, to encourage, comfort, console.

35. We have become partakers in Christ if we do what?
36. What are we to do today if we hear His voice?

Read Malachi 4:2

37. "But to you who _____ My name..."
38. How shall the Sun of Righteousness arise?
39. Not only are we promised healing if we fear His name, are we not also promised abundance?

Read Matthew 17:14-20

40. What was Jesus' reaction toward His disciples when they could not cure the epileptic boy?
41. What was Jesus' answer to His disciples as to why they could not "cast it out"?
42. Would anything be impossible for you if you had the faith of a mustard seed?
43. If a mustard seed isn't very big, does your faith have to be very big?
44. Verse 21 tells how unbelief can be eliminated. List the two ways.
 - A. _____
 - B. _____

HINDRANCES TO HEALING
(Discipleship Answer Key)

1. For a lack of knowledge
2. To those who are perishing
3. The power of God
4. A. The wisdom of the wise
B. The understand of prudent
5. The wisdom of this world
6. God
7. By the foolishness of preaching to save those who believe
8. Believe
9. The things of the Spirit of God
10. Because they think it is foolish
11. Because they are spiritually discerned
12. In the vanity of your mind
13. A. Your understanding will be darkened
B. Be alienated from God
14. A. Through ignorance
B. The blindness of heart
15. To sin no more
16. Lest a worse thing come upon him
17. Jesus made him whole
18. To whom you yield yourself and are obedient
19. To death
20. To righteousness
21. His own sin or his parents sin
22. Neither
23. That the works of God should be manifest or revealed in Him
24. A. To kill
B. To steal
C. To destroy
25. Yes
26. To give life abundantly
27. Yes
28. Because they knew Him as Joseph and Mary's son—in the natural
29. A prophet is without honor in his own country
30. Because of their unbelief
31. Those who are sick
32. The sinner
33. An evil heart of unbelief
34. Exhort one another
35. We hold the beginning of our confidence steadfast to the end
36. Do not harden your heart
37. Fear
38. With healing in His wings

39. Yes

40. Frustration

41. Because of their unbelief

42. No

43. No

44. A. Prayer
B. Fasting

HINDRANCES TO HEALING (Additional Information)

In Acts 3:7 a lame man was healed instantaneously (Luke 5:25), but not until Peter had reached down and lifted the man up. Faith has to be acted on (John 9:7). Peter acted on his faith and this lame man acted in faith by allowing Peter to give him a hand (Acts 3:7).

Faith is made perfect or complete by our actions (James 2:22). Actions do not produce faith. Faith is a gift of God (Ephesians 2:8) that comes through hearing God's Word (Romans 10:17). But true faith doesn't carry its full power until it is acted on. There must first be faith, then actions, then physical results, always in that order. In Acts 3:7, it doesn't say that this man was jerked up by Peter. No, the man leaped up with Peter's help. This man had faith!

If it was simply Jesus' willingness to heal that determined whether or not healing took place, then all the sick would be healed. James 5:15 says that it's not prayer that saves the sick, but rather the prayer of faith that saves the sick. Healing is governed by law. Impassioned pleas to God will not obtain the miracle we seek, although Jesus is touched by our feelings (Hebrews 4:15). It requires faith (Hebrews 11:6). It's not because Jesus knows our needs and hears our cries that miracles don't happen, but rather it's because very few know how the law of faith works.

One of the main differences between a God-kind of faith and a natural faith, which everyone has, is that human faith believes only what it can see, taste, hear, smell, and feel. God's kind of faith believes in things that cannot be seen. You must believe that you receive your answer when you pray--not when you see the things you desired. Simply put, faith is our response to God's ability, made complete by our actions. Trust Him completely, and because you believe, your actions will follow.

FORGIVENESS

Don Krow

Today we're going to look at the subject of forgiveness from Matthew 18:21-22: "Then came Peter to him [Jesus], and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times? Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times: but, Until seventy times seven." I think Peter thought he was being very generous to ask how many times he should forgive someone who sinned against him, "seven times in a day do you think?" Jesus said, "Peter, not seven but seventy times seven." That's 490 times, but it doesn't mean that after 490 times you don't have to forgive. What Jesus said was an impossible number of offenses that would happen to an individual in a day. He was saying forgiveness should be continual, that it should go on and on. Forgiveness should be the real attitude of a Christian. Jesus said in Luke 23:34, "Father forgive them; for they know not what they do." And also Stephen the martyr, in Acts 7:60 said, "Lay not this sin to their charge." Not all people will receive forgiveness, but the attitude in the heart of a Christian should be always to offer it.

Jesus tells a parable about forgiveness when he continues in verse 23, "Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king, which would take account of [make a reckoning with] his servants, And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him, which owed him ten thousand talents. [The Living Bible says that is like ten million dollars.] But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made. The servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all." Now here's the situation: There is a man who actually owes ten million dollars to his master. There is no way he can pay it—he knows he can't and the master knows he can't. In those days you couldn't claim bankruptcy like you can in United States—they'd sell you, your wife, your children, and everything you had, and you'd go into slavery. You would be sent to prison until everything was paid, and if it never was, you'd stay in prison all your life. This man did the only thing he knew to do: he got down on his knees and cried for mercy, "Oh, master, please be patient with me! Please, I beg you. I'll repay you everything, just be patient!" Notice what happened in verse 27. It says the master was moved with compassion for him, and he forgave him his debt.

We had a debt we could not pay. The Bible says (Romans 3:23) that the wages of sin was death—separation from God for eternity—all the silver and gold in the world couldn't redeem us. Then God in His compassion and in His grace sent His son Jesus Christ to earth to pay the debt we couldn't pay. God looked upon us in His compassion and mercy and said, "I forgive you that debt."

This man who had just been forgiven ten million dollars was owed something like twenty dollars by a fellowservant. He found him and said, "I've just been forgiven ten million dollars, and what is twenty dollars to me? I want you to be as free as I am! Just let it go, it's okay, for I've been forgiven ten million dollars!" That is what should have happened, but it didn't. Let's read what really happened in verses 28-31. "But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellowservants, which owed him an hundred pence: and he laid hands on him, and took him by the throat, saying, Pay me what thou owest. And his fellowservant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt. So when his fellowservants saw what was done, they were very sorry, and came and told

unto their lord all that was done.” He threw that man into prison for twenty dollars after he’d just been forgiven ten million dollars! Can you imagine that?

Verses 32-34 say, “Then his lord, after he had called him, said unto him, O thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me: Shouldest not thou also have had compassion on thy fellowservant, even as I had pity on thee? And his lord was wroth and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due unto him.” This man was then thrown into prison because of the way he treated his fellow servant, and thus forfeited his original forgiveness. Jesus said in verse 35, “So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses.” Isn’t it foolish, having been forgiven all our sin—the wages of which are death and separation from God for eternity—to refuse to forgive? We beseech God saying, “Forgive me and have mercy on me through Jesus Christ,” receive forgiveness, and then turn and refuse to forgive someone else for a little thing we think is so big—after having received forgiveness for all the things we’ve done. God’s says that’s wickedness.

I pastored a church awhile back, and there was a young woman in the congregation who was able to see things in the future. She came to me one day and said, “Is it the Holy Spirit telling me things to come, and showing me things in the future? I know when people are going to die and when someone is going to have a car wreck, and things like that.” I said, “You won’t like my answer, but I don’t believe that’s the Holy Spirit. I think it’s a spirit of divination, the same spirit that followed the Apostle Paul around in Acts 16. He finally rebuked it and commanded it to come out of that girl and she lost her ability to tell fortunes.” I went on to tell her that I wasn’t God, and said, “I want you to go to Jesus and ask Him, ‘Lord, what is telling me things and giving me information, even before I was saved, is it your Holy Spirit, or is it something else?’” She came back to me one day and said, “I talked to the Lord about it, and I think it’s alright.” I said, “Whatever the Lord says is alright—I’m not the Great Shepherd.”

This was in early 1986, and do you know what happened in 1986? We had a space shuttle called the Challenger, and eight people went up in it. One of them was a woman schoolteacher. As this young lady was watching television, she saw the woman saying, “Tomorrow I’m going up in the Challenger,” and talking about it. A spirit spoke to her and said, “She’s going to die, she’s going to die.” The next day when the Challenger was launched, it blew up as the whole world watched, and all of the crew perished. The young lady came back to me and said, “Brother Don, I think what’s talking to me and giving me information may not be the Holy Spirit. Would you pray for me?”

Following the service that night, after everyone left, I took her by the hand and said, “You unclean spirit of divination, come out of her!” Nothing happened. Jesus’ disciples tried to cast an unclean spirit out of young man once and couldn’t do it, and Jesus said, “Bring him to me.” So I said, “Lord, I thought I knew what was going on here, but I bring this lady to you. Show us what’s going on.” My wife was praying with us and God gave her a word of knowledge. She said, “It has something to do with her mother.” I said to the woman, “Will you forgive your mother?” The moment I said that, a voice screamed out of her, “NO! She gave me away!” Then I said, “I bind you, you unclean spirit,” and asked the woman again if she would forgive her mother. She then forgave and released her mother, and let her go by the grace and help of God. She was able to let go by making the decision to forgive, and then she received her deliverance and freedom.

Just like Jesus said in the parable in Matthew 18, I'm saying that if we do not forgive from our hearts, after we've been forgiven such a great debt by our heavenly Father, we will be delivered into the hands of the tormenters. What are the tormenters? They can be all kinds of things—demonic strongholds; oppression, sickness, depression, disease, and many other things. The root is unforgiveness, not forgiving after we have been forgiven, allows Satan a foothold in our lives. The Bible says we have to make the decision to forgive. In the Lord's prayer (Matthew 6:9-11) Jesus said to forgive as we've been forgiven.

Mark 11:25-26 says that when we pray, if we have anything against anyone, we're to forgive. What does that mean? Unforgiveness should stay in our hearts how long? Only as long as it takes us to go to the Lord and pray. And if we have the slightest bit of unforgiveness against anyone, we should release them and say, "God, I'm letting them go today. I'm forgiving them. I'm making a choice, because You forgave me such a great debt."

Lord, I pray for anyone reading this lesson that has unforgiveness in their life to make a decision right this moment to let that person go, to forgive them whether they are living or dead. I pray they will let it go and let that hurt be healed by your power and your grace today, Lord. I thank you in Jesus' name. Amen.

FORGIVENESS (Outline)

Matthew 18:21-35, “Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times? ²²Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times: but, Until seventy times seven. ²³Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king, which would take account of his servants. ²⁴And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him, which owed him ten thousand talents. ²⁵But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made. ²⁶The servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. ²⁷Then the lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt. ²⁸But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellowservants, which owed him an hundred pence: and he laid hands on him, and took him by the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest. ²⁹And his fellowservant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. ³⁰And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt. ³¹So when his fellowservants saw what was done, they were very sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done. ³²Then his lord, after that he had called him, said unto him, O thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me: ³³Shouldest not thou also have had compassion on thy fellowservant, even as I had pity on thee? ³⁴And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due unto him. ³⁵So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses.”

There is an indefinite amount of offenses that a person can experience in one day. Forgiveness should be continuous. It should be the real attitude of a Christian. Luke 23:34, “Then said Jesus, Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do. And they parted his raiment, and cast lots.” Also Stephen, the martyr, said in Acts 7:60, “Lay not this sin to their charge” as he was being stoned.

Not all people will receive forgiveness, but the attitude and heart of a Christian should always be to offer forgiveness.

We had a debt that we could not pay. The Bible says that the wages of our sin is death, or separation from God for eternity. All the silver and gold in the world couldn't redeem us. God in His grace and compassion sent His Son, Jesus, to pay the debt we couldn't pay. God looked on us in compassion and said, “I forgive your debt.”

When you make a decision to forgive and let go of the hurt with the help of God, you then can walk in deliverance and freedom.

If we don't forgive others from our hearts, when we've been forgiven so much by God, we'll be delivered to the tormentors. The tormentors can be demonic strongholds, sickness, depression and many other things the root of which is unforgiveness.

Mark 6:12 says, "And they went out, and preached that men should repent." Jesus said in the Lord's prayer to forgive as we've been forgiven. Mark 11:25 says, "And when ye stand praying, forgive, if ye have ought [anything] against any: that your Father also which is in heaven may forgive you your trespasses." If we have the least bit of ought against anyone, we should release him and ask God to help us let that person go and forgive him, because He forgave us such a great debt.

FORGIVENESS (Teacher's Guide)

1. What is Jesus saying in Matthew 18:21-22 about forgiveness?

That forgiveness should be extended to others, with no limits.

2. What does Psalm 103:10-14 show us about God's love in forgiving us?

Because of God's mercy, we do not get what we deserve. As far as the east is from the west, He has removed our sins from us.

3. A. What does Matthew 18:11-14 show us about God's concern for the lost?

He is not willing that any perish.

- B. Why should we forgive others, according to Ephesians 4:32?

Because God, for Christ's sake, forgave us.

- C. What does James 2:13 show us about having mercy towards others?

We will be treated the way we treat others.

4. A. What did Jesus say about forgiving others in Matthew 6:12?

He will forgive our sins, as we forgive those who have sinned against us.

- B. When should you forgive others according to Mark 11:25?

When we pray.

FORGIVENESS (Detailed Teacher's Guide)

Note: The following information may be read out loud (a numbered section at a time) with the person(s) being disciplined. After each numbered section is read, pause and ask the question(s) that correspond to the paragraph(s), and then discuss them.

Read Matthew 18:21-35 (out loud).

¹Peter thought he was being very generous by offering to forgive his brother seven times in one day, but Jesus said he should forgive him 490 times in one day. It would seem impossible to have someone sin against you 490 times in one day. Jesus is actually saying that there should be no limit to our forgiveness.

²Regardless of how many times someone sins, if he repents each time (Luke 17:4), we are supposed to forgive him and confirm our love unto him (2 Corinthians 2:6-8).

If God expects us to forgive our brother who has trespassed against us 490 times in one day (actually an unlimited number of times), certainly He who is love (1 John 4:8), will do no less for us.

³The word "therefore" that Jesus begins this parable with in Matthew 18:23, ties this teaching with His previous statement on forgiving (verse 22), and God's compassion for the lost (Matthew 18:12-14).

The main thrust of this parable is that when people wrong us, we should remember God's great mercy that He has shown to us, and respond in kind (Ephesians 4:32). Any debt that could be owed to us is insignificant compared to the debt we have been forgiven. We should have compassion for others as Christ has for us (Colossians 3:13, and James 2:13).

¹ What is Jesus saying in Matthew 18:21-22 about forgiveness?

² What does Psalm 103:10-14 show us about God's love in forgiving us?

³ (a) What does Matthew 18:11-14 show us about God's concern for the lost?

(b) Why should we forgive others, according to Ephesians 4:32?

(c) What does James 2:13 show us about having mercy towards others?

⁴If we fail to forgive others as we have been forgiven, then this parable teaches that we can, once again, become liable for the debt that was forgiven. This could also pertain to a person who has been saved, but renounces his faith, becomes reprobate, and perishes (Hebrews 10:28-29).

It is certain that not every part of this parable can be applied literally because the lord of this servant commanded this man's wife and children to be sold as part of the payment of the debt. It cannot be applied to the spiritual meaning of this parable in light of the scriptures' teaching that every man or woman will receive judgment for his own sins and not another's (Deuteronomy 24:16, 2 Kings 14:6, Jeremiah 31:29-30, and Ezekiel 18:19-32).

Therefore, caution should be used when drawing conclusions from this parable about judgment. The main point is the necessity of forgiving others and the severe consequences if we don't.

⁴(a) What did Jesus say about forgiving others in Matthew 6:12?
(b) When should you forgive others according to Mark 11:25?

FORGIVENESS (Discipleship Questions)

Read Matthew 18:21-22

1. How many times did Peter think that he should forgive?
2. How many times did Jesus say we should forgive?
3. Was that a literal number of times that we should keep track of offenses, or should we just forgive every time someone sins against us?

Read Matthew 18:23-35

4. What did the servant beg for in verse 26?
5. What was the master's feeling towards him?
6. Because of the master's compassion, what did he do for the servant?
7. Right after this servant was forgiven, what did he go out and do?
8. Did he show mercy and compassion for his fellowservant?
9. What happened when the master found out about this?
10. What does Jesus speak to each of us about forgiveness in verse 35?

Read Psalm 103:2-3

11. What is the first benefit we are told not to forget in verse 3?

Read Psalm 130:3-4

12. Why is it that God may be feared in our lives?

Read Ezekiel 18:20-22, 30-32

13. Shall the son bear the sins of the father?
14. What happens when a wicked man turns from his sin?
15. Will any of his transgressions be held against him?

Verse 30-32

- 16. What does God command us to do in verse 30?
- 17. What are we to get in verse 31?
- 18. Does the Lord have pleasure and want any to perish or be lost forever?

Read Matthew 18:11-14

- 19. What has the Son of Man come to save?
- 20. Who does He rejoice over, the 99 who did not stray or the 1 who was lost and then found?
- 21. What is NOT the will of God?

Read Acts 3:19

- 22. What two things must we do to have our sins blotted out [forgiven]?
A. _____ B. _____
- 23. What comes from the presence of the Lord?

Read Acts 13:38

- 24. What is preached through Jesus?

Read Ephesians 1:7

- 25. What do we have through Jesus' blood?
A. _____ B. _____

Read Ephesians 4:31-32

- 26. What are we commanded to "put away" from ourselves?
A. _____
B. _____
C. _____
D. _____
E. _____
F. _____
- 27. How are we to be towards one another instead?
A. _____ B. _____ C. _____
- 28. How are we to forgive?

Read 1 John 1:9

29. What is Jesus faithful to do if we confess, or repent, from our sins?
A. _____
B. _____

Read Matthew 6:9-15

30. In the Lord's Prayer, verse 12, if God forgives us, what should we also do?
31. What will happen if we forgive men their trespasses?
32. What happens if we do not forgive others?

Read Mark 11:25-26

33. When should we forgive others?

Read Colossians 3:12-13

34. As the "elect of God, holy and beloved," what are we to "put on"?
A. _____
B. _____
C. _____
D. _____
E. _____

35. Is it a request or a command to forgive one another? (Circle one)

Read John 2:5

36. What are we commanded to do in this verse?

FORGIVENESS
(Discipleship Questions)

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. Seven times | 18. No |
| 2. Seventy times seven | 19. That which was lost |
| 3. Forgive every time | 20. The one |
| 4. Patience | 21. That any should perish |
| 5. Compassion | 22. A. Repent
B. Be converted |
| 6. Forgave him and released him | 23. Refreshing |
| 7. Went to one of his fellowservants who owed him money and demanded payment | 24. Forgiveness of sins |
| 8. No | 25. A. Redemption
B. Forgiveness of sins |
| 9. He was angry and imprisoned him until his debt was paid | 26. A. Bitterness
B. Wrath
C. Anger
D. Clamor
E. Evil speaking
F. Malice |
| 10. We need to forgive others from our hearts because Jesus has forgiven us | 27. A. Kind
B. Tenderhearted
C. Forgiving |
| 11. He forgives all our iniquities (sins) | 28. Forgive as God in Christ forgave us |
| 12. Because He is the only one who can forgive my sins | 29. A. Forgave our sins
B. Cleanse us from all unrighteousness |
| 13. No | 30. Forgive others |
| 14. He shall live and not die | 31. God will forgive us |
| 15. No | |
| 16. Repent, and turn away from all your transgressions | |
| 17. A new heart and a new spirit | |

32. God won't forgive us
33. Whenever we pray or look to God
34. A. Tender mercies
B. Meekness
C. Kindness
D. Longsuffering
E. Humbleness
35. Command
36. Whatever He says to you, do it!

FORGIVENESS (Additional Information)

Text: Matthew 18:21-35.

(Matthew 18:22) Peter thought he was being very generous by offering to forgive his brother seven times in one day, but Jesus said he should forgive him 490 times in one day. It would seem to be impossible to have someone sin against you 490 times in one day. Jesus is actually saying that there should be no limit to our forgiveness.

In context, this principle applies to church discipline. Regardless of how many times we have to discipline someone, if he repents each time (Luke 17:4), we are supposed to forgive them and confirm our love unto him (2 Corinthians 2:6-8).

If God expects us to forgive our brother who has trespassed against us 490 times in one day (actually an unlimited number of times), certainly He who is love (1 John 4:8) will do no less with us.

(Matthew 18:23) The word “therefore” that Jesus begins this parable with, ties this teaching to His previous statement on forgiving (verse 22) and, indeed, on the related topics of church discipline (verses 15-20) and also God’s compassion for the lost (verses 12-14). This parable simply illustrates what He already said.

The main thrust of this parable is that when we have people who wrong us, we should remember God’s great mercy He has shown to us and respond in kind (Ephesians 4:32). Any debt that could be owed to us is insignificant compared to the debt we have been forgiven. We should have compassion on others as Christ had on us (Colossians 3:13, and James 2:13).

If we fail to forgive others as we have been forgiven, then this parable teaches that we can, once again, become liable for the debt that had been forgiven. This could be illustrating the church discipline spoken of in verses 15-20. This man’s fellowservants brought him before his master for judgment, similar to Christ’s instructions about how to discipline a brother. This could also illustrate a person who has been saved, but who continues to renounce his faith, and becomes reprobate.

It is certain that not every part of this parable can be applied literally because the Lord of this servant commanded this man’s wife and children to be sold as part of the payment of this debt. This cannot be applied to the spiritual meaning of this parable in the light of the scriptures’ teaching that every man or woman will receive judgment for his own sins and not another’s sins.

Therefore, caution should be used when drawing conclusions from this parable about judgment. The main point emphasized is the necessity of forgiving others and the severe consequences if we do not.

MARRIAGE PART 1

Don Krow

Today we're going to talk about marriage. First of all, I want to give you some statistics: 75 percent of all family units are going to need some kind of marriage counseling. One out of two marriages will end in divorce. In fifty percent of marriages, a mate will be unfaithful within the first five years. Even in the Christian realm, they say as high as thirty percent of ministers will be involved in an inappropriate relationship with someone in their church. It appears to me that we obviously haven't understood the principles of the Bible if those statistics are anywhere close. We're going to look at the subject of marriage and see some of the things God says about it—how you might be able to strengthen your marriage relationship.

First of all, I want to say this: Marriage was God's idea; He designed it. Genesis 2:18 says, "And the Lord God said, It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him an help meet for him." Also Genesis 1:31 says, "And God saw everything that he had made, and, behold, it was very good. And the evening and the morning were the sixth day." You have to remember that this was a perfect creation. God came and fellowshiped with man, had a wonderful relationship with him. Each day He would come in the cool of the evening and fellowship with Adam.

Sometimes we think if we had a perfect relationship with God, we wouldn't really need anything else, but that's not true. God said in Genesis 1:31 concerning the creation He made, "And behold it was very good." The first thing that He said was "not good" was in Genesis 2:18, "It is not good that the man should be alone." So marriage was God's idea to meet the need that man had, to give him a help-meet to deal with the problem of loneliness he might experience in his life. Marriage, if we follow the instruction manual and put into it what God wants, was meant to bring happiness not misery.

Genesis 2:24 is the first time the Bible really talks a lot about marriage. It says, "Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh." Marriage is leaving all other relationships to refocus your life on another individual, and God designed it that way. It's like a tri-unity relationship. I don't know if you understand what I mean, but in the marriage relationship when God called Adam and Eve together, it wasn't just Adam relating to God or Eve relating to God. It was now Adam and Eve as a unit, in oneness of purpose relating to God. The Bible says in 1 Peter 3:7, "Likewise, ye husbands, dwell with them [our wives] according to knowledge . . . that your prayers be not hindered." Genesis 5:1-2, a really a great Scripture, says, "This is the book of the generations of Adam. In the day that God created man, in the likeness of God made he him; Male and female created he them, and blessed them, and called their name Adam, in the day when they were created." Notice that Adam named his wife, Eve, but God called Adam and Eve, together as a unit, Adam. So in the marriage relationship, it's no longer God and me or God and that woman—it's me and my wife in oneness, heirs according to the grace of life who have been called to serve God in purpose, to walk in oneness and unity.

Genesis 2:24, which we just read, says a man will leave his father and mother and cleave to his wife, and they shall be one flesh. The word “cleave” means: to stick or adhere to, to become one, to be one in purpose. If you’re having a problem in your marriage relationship today, let me ask you a few questions: Are the things you’re doing, the way you’re acting toward your wife, the things you’re saying to her, causing you to come closer together as one? Or are they causing a breach or separation? The commandment of Scripture for marriage is to cleave, to stick to, so are the things you’re doing building your relationship or tearing it down? We need to look at some of these things.

People think love is just an emotional feeling: “I used to love you, but I fell out of love—I don’t love you anymore.” Suppose you come from a dysfunctional family. You go before a minister or judge to be married; you commit to give your life to that individual; you really want this to work till death do you part. But because of your dysfunctional family, you’ve never seen love, never seen it expressed in your family, never seen your parents share any warm expression of love. She may have come from a family that expressed a lot of affection, and you don’t know how. Even though you want to love this person you’re committing yourself to, because you’re so dysfunctional yourself, having never seen love expressed before, you probably will fail. Chances are that within a few years you will go in for counseling and say, “We’re just not getting along. I don’t love her anymore.” Well, I’ve got good news for you today: If you’re having problems in your marriage, there’s something that can correct it.

When you buy a new refrigerator and have a problem with it, you know to go to the manual. The manual will tell you if it’s doing this, this is probably what’s wrong, or you can take it to a serviceman. There is a manual to work on your marriage, to fix it. It’s called God’s Word, and the Bible tells us in Titus 2:4 that love is something that can be taught, something that can be learned. If you came from a dysfunctional family and don’t really know how to love your wife—your marriage is falling apart—there’s good news. In 1 John 5:3 it says, “For this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments: and his commandments are not grievous.” Through the commandments of Jesus Christ, who shows us how to love, how to express kindness and generosity, and how to seek the welfare of the other person in your marriage relationship, God can turn that situation around for you.

This is just an introduction to the subject of marriage. We’re going to continue another lesson on it and I just want to say, “God bless you today as you continue in your study.” We believe God wants to impart more wisdom and knowledge as you look into this subject.

MARRIAGE - PART 1 (Outline)

THE BAD NEWS

Seventy-five percent of all families need counseling.
Fifty percent of all marriages (one out of two) end in divorce.
Fifty percent of married individuals are involved in infidelity.
Thirty percent of ministers are involved in inappropriate relationships.

MARRIAGE—GOD’S IDEA

Genesis 1:31 says, “And God saw every thing that he had made, and, behold, it was very good. And the evening and the morning were the sixth day.” And Genesis 2:18 says, “And the LORD God said, It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him an help meet for him.” Even in the garden, in a perfect relationship with God, man needed a helpmate, a companion.

Marriage was intended to be a happy relationship.

Genesis 2:24, “Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh.” Marriage is intended to be an exclusive relationship where a man or woman leaves all other relationships to pursue a oneness with his/her mate—a tri-unity with God and your spouse.

Genesis 5:1, “This is the book of the generations of Adam. In the day that God created man, in the likeness of God made he him.” God calls Adam and Eve by one name: Adam. They are a unit. “To cleave” means “to adhere to, cling to, or stick to.”

1 Peter 3:7, “Likewise, ye husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giving honor unto the wife, as unto the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life; that your prayers be not hindered.”

Is what you are saying and doing to your spouse building your relationship, or tearing it down? If you came from a dysfunctional family, you may need to learn how to participate in a relationship.

THE GOOD NEWS

God gave us a marriage manual that works—The Bible. Just obey it! Titus 2:4, “That they may teach the young women to be sober, to love their husbands, to love their children.” Love can be taught. 1 John 5:3, “For this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments: and his commandments are not grievous.” Through Jesus, God can turn the worst situation around.

MARRIAGE
PART 1
(Teacher's Guide)

1. Ephesians 5:31 is a quotation from Genesis 2:24. According to Ephesians 5:32, what is God really talking about in this passage?

A relationship between Christ and His church (likened to marriage).

2. What is James 4:4-5 teaching?

God is jealous over us and wants us to be true to Him.

3. Why should I walk in unity and love toward my wife? (1 Peter 3:7)

So that my prayers will not be hindered.

4. According to John 15:5, what can be accomplished without Christ in our lives?

Without Christ we can do nothing.

MARRIAGE
PART 1
A MODEL OF GOD'S RELATIONSHIP WITH HIS PEOPLE
(Detailed Teacher's Guide)

Note: The following information may be read out loud (a numbered section at a time) with the person(s) being discipled. After each numbered section is read, pause and ask the question(s) that correspond to the paragraph(s), and then discuss them.

¹ In marriage there is an exclusion of all others. The Bible says, "they two shall be one" (Ephesians 5:31). It doesn't say, "they three," "they four," or "they five." It says, "they two shall be one flesh." In the same way there is an exclusion of all others in a marriage, there is to be an exclusivity in our relationship with God. He alone is our God, and we alone are His people.

² In the physical relationship of marriage, there is a oneness and a closeness that brings you back together and keeps strengthening that covenant. There is a spiritual counterpart to that in our relationship with Christ and our exposure, oneness, and openness to Him. You see, He wants us to be His, and He wants to be ours, to the exclusion of all others. That's why if you do a word study on the word "fornication" in the Bible, and you trace it back far enough, the root word of "fornication" is "idolatry." It's "idolatry"—not "adultery."

Do you know what idolatry is? Colossians 3:5 says, "Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry." I believe that God gave this definition of idolatry because our relationship to Him is just like a marriage relationship. When a person has been untrue in his marriage relationship, it causes the spouse to experience the deepest depths of pain. When someone has been unfaithful to the covenant – the exclusion that should have been there, the oneness in love and exposure that was not to be shared with anyone else, is devastated. God says that is a small illustration of what it's like when His people are unfaithful to Him. When you do a study on idolatry, you can't escape the spiritual context of how God uses it. He says, "Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God. Do ye think that the scripture saith in vain, The spirit that dwelleth in us lusteth to envy?" (James 4:4-5). What is He saying here? He's saying that He's jealous over you. He wants you, to the exclusion of all others.

¹Ephesians 5:31 is a quotation from Genesis 2:24. According to Ephesians 5:32, what is God really talking about in this passage?

²What is James 4:4-5 teaching us?

³First Peter 3:7 says, “Likewise, ye husbands, dwell with them [your wives] according to knowledge, giving honour unto the wife, as unto the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life; that your prayers be not hindered.” In this union, God has called both the male and the female to be heirs together of the gracious gift of life.

Have you ever taken the attitude of, “I don’t care what my husband (or wife) does, I’m going to do this or that,” or “I’m going to follow God”? That’s fine, but God doesn’t see it that way. The way God sees it is that you’re heirs together of the gracious gift of life. If you don’t understand that principle, and you try to be independent and do your own thing, your prayers will be hindered.

⁴The counterpart to this truth is that when God has called us into union with Him, into what He even calls a marriage relationship, we become heirs together with Him of the gracious gift of life. Just as I’m not to do anything independently of my wife because of our relationship, so it is with my relationship in the Lord—I’m not to do anything independently of Him.

³Why should I walk in unity and love toward my wife? (1 Peter 3:7)

⁴According to John 15:5, what can be accomplished without Christ in my life?

WHEN GOD SAYS, “I DO” GOD’S MYSTERY IN MARRIAGE REVEALED (Additional Information)

During the time of Jesus there were several ideas and opinions about divorce just as there are today. Jewish leaders were divided on this issue. Some believed a person could divorce for any reason. Others believed divorce had to involve fornication. It was such a controversial subject that the Pharisees decided to ask Jesus a question concerning divorce, because no matter which side Jesus took, He would be on someone’s wrong side.

We read in Matthew 19:3, “The Pharisees also came unto him, tempting him, and saying unto him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause?” The phrase, “put away” actually means “divorce.” These Pharisees were asking Jesus a trick question concerning divorce. We know this because verse 3 tells us they came tempting and testing Him, asking if it was lawful for a man to divorce his wife for every reason.

Notice how Jesus answered the question about divorce. Verse 4 says, “And he answered and said unto them, Have ye not read, that he which made them at the beginning made them male and female.” His answer to the Pharisees was a reminder that marriage was God’s idea--not man’s.

Jesus got to the heart of the matter concerning divorce--
God’s heart for marriage.

When He told them that in the beginning God made them male and female, He was referring them to God’s original design for marriage. It was God who designed marriage and gave it purpose and meaning. Genesis 1:26-27 states, “And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth. So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them.”

I believe these scriptures tell us something else about God’s original design for marriage: The complete likeness of God is found in the combination of male and female together. God said, “Let us make man in our image,” and then He said, “let them have dominion.” Genesis 5:1-2 says, “This is the book of the generations of Adam. In the day that God created man, in the likeness of God made he him; Male and female created he them; and blessed them, and called their name Adam, in the day when they were created.”

Notice what God’s divine and original idea concerning this subject of oneness in marriage was. He created the male and the female to be one being together and He called their name Adam. I always assumed that God created Adam, and then later on He created Eve; so first there was Adam, and then there was Eve. What God did through the creation (when He created male and female), was He created them in His own likeness, and He called them Adam. God named them

Adam. Adam was a “them.” In God’s eyes Adam was the combination of male and female. This is speaking within the context of the original union of marriage.

Now go back to Matthew 19, verses 4-6, where Jesus is answering this question concerning divorce. “And he answered and said unto them [the Pharisees], Have ye not read, that he which made them at the beginning made them male and female, And said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother, and shall cleave to his wife: and they twain [the two] shall be one flesh? Wherefore they are no more twain [or two], but one flesh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder [or separate].” This is saying that not only was marriage God’s idea but God does the joining. Divorce is separating something God has joined not “undoing” something we’ve done.

Why Did God Create Woman?

Genesis 1:31 says, “And God saw every thing that he had made, and, behold, it was very good. And the evening and the morning were the sixth day.” Then in Genesis 2, God tells us the very first thing He noticed after creation that was not good. We’re talking about a perfect paradise where no sin existed before Genesis 3. God had created all things good (Gen. 1:31), but there was one thing missing in His creation. Adam had a perfect relationship with God, he walked with Him, and apparently did not need anything. But there was one thing that was lacking in Adam’s life; it’s described in Genesis 2:18, “And the LORD God said, It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him an help meet for him” (Once again it’s God’s idea for man to have a helpmate not man’s).

All of the animal creation had a counterpart, but Adam was by himself. God saw what was lacking in Adam: He was alone and loneliness was a problem. He was alone even though he had a perfect relationship with God. Some people say, “If I had a perfect relationship with God, I would not have any other needs.” While this is essentially true, as a norm God has created man to need a counterpart, a helpmeet, a woman.

What is a woman’s purpose? It’s to be a help, an aid, an assistant to the man. That is her ministry. So much talk today involves trying to make men and women independent of each other. But God created the woman to “help,” or assist, the man. God said the man needed a helper. In today’s language and culture, being a “helper” is not associated with any significant ministry or position of importance. However, the “role” of helper in the Bible is a vital one. It means you can accomplish something with a helper that you cannot do alone.

An example of this helper role is found in Romans 8:26-27 where it says, “Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit itself maketh intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered. And he that searcheth the hearts knoweth what is the mind of the Spirit, because he maketh intercession for the saints according to the will of God.” The word “helpeth” was translated from the Greek word “sunantilambanomai” meaning “to take hold of opposite together, i.e. cooperate (assist).” It’s describing a union in which the Holy Spirit is not interceding for us but through us. The word “infirmities” is translated as weakness in five other places and is used here to describe a mental and moral weakness not sickness. In this passage our weakness is not knowing how we should pray. We need the Spirit’s “help” to pray effectively.

Marriage: A Model of God's Relationship with His People

Have you noticed that nearly everything we're seeing about the marriage relationship has a spiritual counterpart? Did you know that God actually talks about three different kinds of marriage in the scriptures? He talks about marriage between a man and a woman, our marriage to Him, and our marriage to the Law.

God compares the marriage union between a man and woman to the relationship that He Himself has with us, His people. In a sense He says, "To help you understand the relationship that I'm calling you to, I'm going to give you a little scale model to show you what I'm talking about." Everything that we can say about a good marriage—one that's all God has designed it to be—is a model of what our relationship with God should be.

Oneness in Marriage

In marriage there is an exclusion of all others. The Bible says, "they two shall be one" (Ephesians 5:31). It doesn't say, "they three," "they four," or "they five." It says, "they two shall be one flesh." In the same way there is an exclusion of all others in a marriage, there is to be an exclusivity in our relationship with God. He alone is our God, and we alone are His people.

Concerning marriage, Genesis 2:25 says, "And they were both naked, the man and his wife, and were not ashamed." There is to be an openness and nakedness in marriage that is to be shared between a man and his wife, and not shared outside of that marriage bond any other place.

Did you know that any time the Bible talks about nakedness in the Scripture, it talks about it in the context of shame? In one instance, while Moses was on the mountain with God, the children of Israel had Aaron make them an idol of gold, and they ate, and played, and committed adultery, and fornication, to their own shame. They showed their nakedness, and their shame was exposed (Exodus 32:25). There are scriptures in Isaiah that talk about nakedness in the context of shame (Isaiah 20:4; 47:3). Nakedness is also mentioned in the book of Revelation. John was instructed to write to the church in Laodicea and tell them, "You think you're in good shape, but you don't know that you're poor and you're wretched and you're naked" (Revelation 3:17). Revelation 16:15 speaks of being naked in the sense of humiliation and shame. There's only one place where nakedness is not spoken of in the context of shame, and that's within the relationship of marriage.

Genesis 2:25 doesn't say the man and the woman were naked and were not ashamed; it says the man and his wife were naked and unashamed. The word "ashamed" conveys the idea of guilt, condemnation, and humiliation. The Bible says in Hebrews 13:4, "Marriage is honourable in all, and the bed undefiled." The marriage bed, according to the Greek text, is without defilement. The phrase "without defilement" means "pure." There is a nakedness, an openness, and an exposure. There is a oneness that's a oneness in body, a oneness in the emotions, a oneness of the deepest level. It's a spiritual oneness ordained by God for the marriage relationship. And it's a model of the relationship He's called us to with Him.

Notice that in 1 Corinthians 6, Paul quotes Genesis 2:24 when he's talking about a sexual union. He says in 1 Corinthians 6:16 that if you went into a harlot, you'd be one body with her. Then in that

verse he refers to Genesis 2:24: “for two, saith he, shall be one flesh.” Now notice what he says in verse 17; “But he that is joined unto the Lord is one spirit.” First he presents a human, earthly illustration of a physical relationship where two people are one in body. Then he talks about a marriage union to the exclusivity of others, followed by the spiritual counterpart to that physical relationship. It’s as if God was saying, “When you come into union with Me, we are one, to the exclusion of others. We are one in love; we are one in exposure; we are one totally.” In the marriage relationship, it is a oneness in body. When we come into union with Him, we’re one in spirit.

I don’t have a complete understanding of all these things, but I do know this: When the physical union is being expressed in the marriage relationship, it’s an ongoing expression not something that only happens once. In the same way, our relationship with Christ needs to be an ongoing expression. That’s why the Bible says that if we’ve sinned, turned away, or gone a different direction, we need to come to our advocate, Jesus Christ, the righteous one. If we’ve sinned, let’s expose our hearts before him. Hebrews 4:13 says that “all things are naked and opened unto the eyes of him with whom we have to do.” Let’s expose ourselves totally to the Lord. Let’s come and intimately love Him. Do you know what happens when that occurs in your relationship with the Lord? You’ll find a strength in the relationship.

In the physical relationship of marriage, there is a oneness and a closeness that brings you back together and keeps strengthening that covenant. There is a spiritual counterpart to that in our relationship with Christ and our exposure, oneness and openness to Him. You see, He wants us to be His, and He wants to be ours, to the exclusion of all others. That’s why, if you do a word study on the word “fornication” in the Bible, and you trace it back far enough, the root word of “fornication” is “idolatry.” It’s “idolatry”—not “adultery.”

Do you know what idolatry is? Colossians 3:5 says, “Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry.” I believe that God gave the definition of idolatry because our relationship to Him is just like a marriage relationship. When a person has been untrue in his marriage relationship, it causes the spouse to experience the deepest depths of pain. When someone has been unfaithful to the covenant—the exclusion that should have been there, the oneness in love and exposure that was not to be shared with anyone else is devastated. God says that is a small illustration of what it’s like when His people are unfaithful to Him. When you do a study on idolatry, you can’t escape the spiritual context of how God uses it. He says, “Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God. Do ye think that the scripture saith in vain, The spirit that dwelleth in us lusteth to envy?” (James 4:4-5). What is He saying here? He’s saying that He’s jealous over you. He wants you, to the exclusion of all others.

First Peter 3:7 says this, “Likewise, ye husbands, dwell with them [your wives] according to knowledge, giving honour unto the wife, as unto the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life; that your prayers be not hindered.” In this union, God has called both the male and the female to be heirs together of the gracious gift of life.

Have you ever taken the attitude of, “I don’t care what my husband (or wife) does, I’m going to do this or that,” or “I’m going to follow God?” That’s fine, but God doesn’t see it that way. The way

God sees it is that you're heirs together of the gracious gift of life. If you don't understand that principle, and you try to be independent and do your own thing, your prayers will be hindered.

The counterpart to this truth is that when God has called us into union with Him, into what He even calls a marriage relationship, we become heirs together with Him of the gracious gift of life. Just as I'm not to do anything independently of my wife because of our relationship, so it is with my relationship in the Lord—I'm not to do anything independently of Him.

Married to the Law

The Bible tells us in Romans 7:1-6 that at one time we had a relationship with the law. What was that relationship with the Law? Romans 7 describes it in terms of a bad marriage relationship. The Bible is referring to the spiritual counterpart of being married to the Law. It says that we are bound by the relationship of marriage until death.

What was the Law? It was my marriage at one time to a really hard taskmaster. Nothing I did in my marriage pleased my husband. The Law was such a perfectionist that no matter how hard I tried, and no matter what I tried to do, it was never good enough in my marriage. I was married to this critical person who never, ever lifted me up, admonished me, or told me I was doing something right. All he told me was the things that I did wrong. Romans 3:20 says "by the law is the knowledge of sin." I was always under a sense of guilt and condemnation when I was married to the Law.

The Bible says that there was only one way that I could be free from that marriage relationship. I had to die, or he had to die. Do you know what? He wouldn't die, so I died, and thus ended my "marriage relationship" to the Law. How did this happen? Let's look at Romans 7:1-3, "Know ye not, brethren, (for I speak to them that know the law,) how that the law hath dominion over a man as long as he liveth? For the woman which hath an husband is bound by the law to her husband so long as he liveth; but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the law of her husband. So then if, while her husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress: but if her husband be dead, she is free from that law; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man."

Paul is really talking about a spiritual truth here. I don't want you to fall under condemnation if you've ever been in the situation described in these verses. God does recognize marriage, He does recognize divorce, and He recognizes remarriage. We can make that statement based on Deuteronomy 24:1-4, under the old covenant, which says, "When a man hath taken a wife, and married her, and it come to pass that she find no favour in his eyes, because he hath found some uncleanness in her: then let him write her a bill of divorcement, and give it in her hand, and send her out of his house. And when she is departed out of his house, she may go and be another man's wife. And if the latter husband hate her, and write her a bill of divorcement, and giveth it in her hand, and sendeth her out of his house; or if the latter husband die, which took her to be his wife; Her former husband, which sent her away, may not take her again to be his wife, after that she is defiled; for that is abomination before the LORD: and thou shalt not cause the land to sin, which the LORD thy God giveth thee for an inheritance."

We can also say that God recognizes divorce and remarriage based on Jesus' conversation with the woman at the well. When Jesus said to her, "Go get your husband," she said, "I don't have a husband." Jesus said, "That's right. You've had five husbands, but the guy that you're with right now is not your husband. It's just a live-in relationship. He's not your husband, but I recognize every one of those previous marriages you've had. I recognize the divorces you've had. But the one that you're living with now is not your husband." She said, "I perceive that you're a prophet" (John 4:16-19). God does recognize divorce and remarriage, but when He is talking about the institution of marriage, He always takes man back to the original idea—the original design—which should be a permanent relationship, because it's a spiritual counterpart to our relationship with the Lord. Even though those other standards are recognized in God's eyes, He's saying, "I'm talking about a relationship with Me, and I'm bringing it to the highest level, because I want you to see it as a spiritual counterpart to a relationship with Me."

Now let's look at Romans 7:4. It says, "Wherefore, my brethren, ye also are become dead to the law." What is he talking about? He's saying that in order to break that old marriage relationship to the law there has to be a death. "By the [crucified] body of Christ." What does that mean? It means that I once had a union to a husband—the Law—but I could never please that man. All he ever did was point out my wrongdoings. That was the function of the Law. Romans 3:20 says that by the Law came the knowledge of sin. I really wanted to be free from that husband, but the only way I could be free was for one of us to die. Then I died, and I was free. How did I die? Romans 7:4 says that I became dead to the law through the crucified body of Christ. You see, when Jesus went to the cross, and I went to the cross with Him, He didn't just die for sins, but He also died to break my relationship with the Law.

What was a relationship with the Law like? Along with all the criticism, it never gave me a helping hand either. It's like the husband who tells his wife, "I want you to do this, and I want you to do that," while he sits down and watches television. Not only does he put demands on her, but he doesn't even lift a finger to help with any of those demands.

What else happened in the marriage relationship with the Law? The result of being under the Law was falling under a curse. Galatians 3:10 says, "Cursed is everyone that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them." I was wretched and miserable under the Law. Not only did I have a standard that was spiritual, but Romans 7:12 says that the Law was spiritual, holy, just, and good; but the Law gave me no power to perform those things. I had to struggle in the resources of my own flesh and my own abilities to do those spiritual things that were demanded of me. I had no helping hand.

So what happened next? Verse 4 of Romans 7 says, "Wherefore, my brethren, ye also are become dead to the law by the body of Christ; that ye should be married to another, even to him who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God." The demands really haven't changed, but I am remarried to a wonderful husband now. And every demand that has ever been placed upon me, He Himself is the ability to fulfill that demand. Everything that was ever required of me, or will ever be required of me by God, my new husband, the One who was raised from the dead so I could be married to Him, is my ability to please my heavenly Father.

MARRIAGE

PART 2

Don Krow

Today we're going to look again at the subject of marriage, and the question is, "What is marriage?" Have you ever thought about that? According to the Bible it was God's idea to design marriage. Marriage is a joining together, a oneness, a uniting. Genesis 2:24 says, "For this reason a man will leave his father and mother and be united to his wife [they will be joined, and he will cleaved to his wife] and they shall become one flesh" (NIV). Did you know that marriage is more than a joining, more than oneness. For example, 1 Corinthians 6:15-6 says if I go out, being a Christian, and join myself to a prostitute, I become one flesh with her. Then consider the quotation from Genesis 2:24 about marriage. Joining myself to a prostitute would not automatically make me divorced from my wife or make me married to the prostitute because I had intercourse with her. So what is marriage? If marriage is a oneness, if it's a joining together, if it's becoming one flesh, what is the difference in that and going to a prostitute, because if you went to a prostitute you obviously would become one flesh with her.

The Bible does say that marriage is a oneness, a joining together, a uniting together, but it's more than that. It is uniting together by a covenant. The word "covenant" in Hebrew is "berith," and it has the idea of binding together. It's a final commitment of an individual, even a commitment till death do you part. Now, if I went into a prostitute, if I did such an evil sin as that, there would be commitment on my part to her. The essence of marriage is first of all forsaking all others. The Bible says you shall leave your father and mother, and you shall cleave to your wife. Ezekiel says "you became mine." It's forsaking all others for this one—to commit yourself to this one. Obviously if you, in an immoral way, go to another person when you are married, that would violate the principle of marriage, the oneness, and unity that comes through a covenant or commitment. Ezekiel 16:8 calls it a covenant of marriage. In Ephesians 5 we learn that in marriage the husband is to love his wife, even as Christ loved the church, so it's a covenant of love. The reason it's a covenant of love is because love is the ruling principle in marriage. Above all things, love must be the ruling principle of marriage.

Marriage is a covenant of oneness. It says in 1 Peter 3:7 that if I don't honor and appreciate my wife as being the weaker vessel and realize that we are heirs together of the grace of life, our prayers will be hindered. Think about that—our spiritual lives could be hindered if we do not walk in the unity and harmony that God has designed for the marriage relationship. Proverbs 2:16-17 talks about a wayward woman who forsakes her marriage covenant, the guide of her youth, and that marriage relationship is called a covenant of her God. This is a very serious thing—it's a covenant we make to an individual, but it's also a covenant that we make before God. As much as I love to minister to people, God has a priority, and that is to focus on our marriage. Marriage really is a focusing of your life onto another individual, and as I said, the ruling principle is love.

Matthew 7:12 says whatever you would want someone to do to you, do to them, for this is the law of the prophets. This is exactly the principle that should rule in marriage. It's not a selfish thing, not for self, not about what can this person give you. The Bible says in 1 Corinthians 13:4 that love is kind, it's seeking the welfare of another—to be generous and kind, and always seek the best for that other individual. The reason marriage is designed that way is because it is an example, a model of what a real relationship with

God should be. He has given us illustrations in the natural. He has shown us how to have a good marriage, a great marriage, because he wants us to have a model of what a real eternal relationship is to be with Him. Marriage is only until death do us part, a temporary thing. The Bible says in the resurrection they neither marry nor are given in marriage. God wants us to understand having a good marriage—the principles of love—the principles of giving unselfishly to another. He is saying, “What I want you to really understand is that I’ve called you into a marriage relationship with me—not a temporary relationship, not one that will just last a few years and then be gone, but an eternal relationship where all of My love will be manifested to you forever and ever.”

Let me give you a few principles of marriage. Marriage is a merger, not just a partnership. The Bible talks about it in Genesis 4 as a knowing, and in 1 Peter 3:7 as being heirs together of the grace of life. Marriage is a covenant, which means it is binding; there’s a commitment involved. Sin did not enter the first church, it entered the first marriage, so we need to get the manual, get the instructions about marriage, and implement the principles of love in our lives. We also ask, “What is love?” The definition of love is really in a sense, unselfishness. Isaiah 53:6 says we are like sheep; that we went astray and turned every one to his own way, but in marriage we focus on the other individual and seek their welfare and benefit.

The Bible tells us in Ephesians that loving your wife is like loving your own body. We husbands are to cherish and honor the wife God has given to us, which means to appreciate her. To love your own body doesn’t mean you sit around and hold hands with yourself, pat yourself, and say, “Oh, I love you.” It’s not that at all. To love yourself is to protect yourself; feed yourself, and look out for yourself. We should never take our wives for granted, never take one of her weaknesses and expose it publicly, never make fun of her, or do things that hurt her. We’re to love her as we love our ourselves.

I would like you to lift yourself up to God in prayer, and first of all, thank Him for loving you. The second thing I want you to do is thank Him for your partner, the mate He gave you. That’s part of the problem. You haven’t appreciated your mate; you put her down, and the Bible says that basically is selfish and is sin. It says in Ephesians 5 that Jesus cleansed the church by the washing of water by the Word, by his Words He spoke over the church. When you speak words over your mate, they will rise to the level of the words you speak. If you say, “You’re no good, you’re ugly, you’re overweight” you will suppress your marriage and cause not oneness but separation and alienation. But if you speak words of kindness like, “Honey I appreciate the things you do, I appreciate you, I love you,” and back them up with your actions, your mate will rise up to the level of those words.

Can’t you see today that a lot of the problems in your marriage relationship are the words you’ve spoken? You have brought your mate down rather than up. I encourage you to speak good words over your mate today. Love is not a feeling; love is speaking the welfare and benefit of another person regardless of how you feel. Begin today with acts of kindness, just like painting several layers of a lacquer on a piece of wood. That’s how love is built, by little acts of kindness. Start to esteem, honor, value, and speak words of love over your mate, and you’ll see a difference. God bless you as you implement these principles.

MARRIAGE PART 2 (Outline)

Genesis 2:24, “Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh.”

1 Corinthians 6:15-16 says, “Know ye not that your bodies are the members of Christ? shall I then take the members of Christ, and make them the members of an harlot? God forbid. ¹⁶What? know ye not that he which is joined to an harlot is one body? for two, saith he, shall be one flesh.” Marriage is more than a joining, it is a uniting together by covenant. Covenant is a binding, a final commitment, forsaking all others for one. United as One.

Ezekiel 16:8 says, “Now when I passed by thee, and looked upon thee, behold, thy time was the time of love; and I spread my skirt over thee, and covered thy nakedness: yea, I swore unto thee, and entered into a covenant with thee, saith the Lord GOD, and thou becamest mine.” We see the covenant of marriage.

Ephesians 5:21-31 says, “Submitting yourselves one to another in the fear of God. ²²Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as unto the Lord. ²³For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church: and he is the saviour of the body. ²⁴Therefore as the church is subject unto Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in every thing. ²⁵Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it; ²⁶That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word, ²⁷That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish. ²⁸So ought men to love their wives as their own bodies. He that loveth his wife loveth himself. ²⁹For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the church: ³⁰For we are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones. ³¹For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh.” Marriage is a covenant of love. Love is the ruling principle of marriage.

1 Peter 3:7 says, “Likewise, ye husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giving honour unto the wife, as unto the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life; that your prayers be not hindered.” Marriage is a covenant of oneness.

Proverbs 2:16-17 says, “To deliver thee from the strange woman, even from the stranger which flattereth with her words; ¹⁷Which forsaketh the guide of her youth, and forgetteth the covenant of her God.” Beware of the wayward woman. Your covenant with God is broken if you lie with another woman. A covenant is between a man, woman, and their God.

Matthew 7:12 says, “Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets.” The priority of marriage is focusing on one another to the exclusion of others.

1 Corinthians 13:4 says, “Charity suffereth long, and is kind; charity envieth not; charity vaunteth not itself, is not puffed up.” Loving is the ruling force in marriage by seeking the welfare of the other person.

Marriage is a small scale model of our eternal relationship with God.

1 Peter 3:7 says, “Likewise, ye husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giving honour unto the wife, as unto the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life; that your prayers be not hindered.” Marriage is a merger. Sin entered the first marriage, not the first church.

Isaiah 53:6 says, “All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the LORD hath laid on him the iniquity of us all.” Marital love seeks to benefit the other.

Ephesians 5:21-31 says, “Submitting yourselves one to another in the fear of God. ²²Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as unto the Lord. ²³For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church: and he is the saviour of the body. ²⁴Therefore as the church is subject unto Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in every thing. ²⁵Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it; ²⁶That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word, ²⁷That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish. ²⁸So ought men to love their wives as their own bodies. He that loveth his wife loveth himself. ²⁹For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the church: ³⁰For we are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones. ³¹For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh.” Cherish, love, appreciate, protect, feed, look out for, and never take advantage of your spouse.

Summary

- Thank God for loving you.
- Thank God for your mate.
- Your mate will rise to the level of the words you use; speak good words over your mate.
- Love is seeking the welfare of the other.
- By little acts of kindness you layer love on your spouse, like layers of lacquer on wood.

MARRIAGE
PART 2
(Teacher's Guide)

1. In Genesis 2:24, what does the word "cleave" mean?

To glue to, stick to, to adhere to.

2. In your relationship with your mate, ask these questions:
"Are the things I am doing drawing us closer or driving us apart?"
"By what I do and say, does it build up our relationship or tear it down?"
"Do I express love and loyalty to my partner?"

3. According to 1 John 4:19, why do we love God?

Because He first loved us.

4. When God calls us to Himself, how is this picture expressed in Ezekiel 16:8?

We become God's own possession, "thou becamest mine."

5. What is the Hebrew meaning of a covenant?

The Hebrew word for covenant is "BERIYTH" (ber-eeth) and is the most binding contract possible. It involves two becoming one. The closest concept is blood brothers, becoming one under a covenant or vow.

6. In the New Covenant, what happens between us and God? (Hebrews 8:10)

He becomes our God and we become His people.

MARRIAGE

PART 2

(Detailed Teacher's Guide)

Note: The following information may be read out loud (a numbered section at a time) with the person(s) being disciplined. After each numbered section is read, pause and ask the question(s) that correspond to the paragraph(s), and then discuss them.

¹ Marriage in scripture means a joining, a oneness, a uniting, “What God has joined together, let no man put asunder” (Matthew 19:6). “The two shall become one flesh” (Ephesians 5:31). “The man shall cleave to his wife and they twain shall become one flesh” (Matthew 19:5). What does the word “cleave” mean? In Hebrew it means “to stick to; to adhere to.” It also means “to pursue.”

² The command was given to man to pursue, cleave and stick to the woman like glue. Why? Because man is the lover in this relationship and woman is the responder. The woman will respond to the way the man loves her. Submission is not blind obedience. Submission is won through the love of the man, just as Jesus became the head of the church and gave Himself for the church, and won the right to have our submission.

If I love my wife, I'll give her tokens of my affection and love. They may be gifts or flowers, or ways of meeting her needs by giving her spending money, providing for her, giving her the security of a home, or expressions of affection that are not necessarily of a sexual nature. Women just need affection. When I do that for my wife, she doesn't get upset with me and say, “I want a divorce.” You know why? My wife doesn't want a divorce when I provide for her, give her security and affection, verbally express my love for her and do other things. She wants to respond in kind to those acts of love. God made her as a woman to be a responder. God says that this kind of relationship, where one responds to acts of love is just a model of His real, eternal relationship with us as responders!

¹ In Genesis 2:24, what does the word “cleave” mean?

² In your relationship with your mate, ask these questions: Are the things I am doing drawing us closer or driving us apart? By what I do and say, does it build our relationship or tear it down? Do I express love and loyalty to my partner?

³ Do you know what I think eternity will be? Eternity will be an endless unfolding of divine love. I believe that the relationship I have right now with the Lord is truly an engagement relationship. In the New Testament, when Mary and Joseph were espoused, it meant that in the eyes of the law they were married, even though it was not consummated. The engagement period was called marriage, and it took a divorce even to break an engagement. Paul said to the church, “I want to present you as a pure virgin unto Christ, wholly and exclusively unto Him” (2 Corinthians 11:2). This marriage relationship is going to be consummated at the marriage supper of the Lamb. I believe that all throughout eternity there’s going to be an unfolding of love. God designed a small, physical model on earth, with the man as the lover and the woman as the responder. And just as she’ll respond back with love if she’s given love, God has said, “I want you to know that you loved Me because I first loved you” (1 John 4:19). The Bible doesn’t say that we just started loving God on our own. The Bible says that we love Him because He first loved us. In Ezekiel 16:8 God says, “Now when I passed by thee, and looked upon thee, behold, thy time was the time of love; and I spread my skirt over thee, and covered thy nakedness: yea, I swear unto thee, and entered into a covenant with thee, saith the Lord GOD, and thou becamest mine.” He gave us a picture of marriage in this verse, but He likened it to bringing us into a relationship with Himself.

So this is the first principle in marriage: anywhere in scripture that it talks about marriage, it’s talking about joining together as one.

⁴ Marriage is more than just a joining together, because this joining together involves a covenant. Sexual intercourse is not marriage. Sexual intercourse is a consummation of marriage, and marriage is a joining together and becoming one in the fullest possible way—it’s only done in covenant. The Hebrew word for this covenant is “BERIYTH” (ber-eeth) and it’s the most binding contract that is possible. It’s even used with the shedding of blood or cutting an animal into pieces. It involves blood. It involves the two becoming one. The closest concept we have is two becoming blood brothers, and marriage is it. It’s becoming one under a covenant and a vow. It’s the vow and the covenant that keep me moving in the area of love toward my wife.

³(a)According to 1 John 4:19, why do we love God?

(b)When God calls us to Himself, how is this picture expressed in Ezekiel 16:8? We become God’s own possession, “thou becamest mine.”

⁴(a)What is the Hebrew meaning of a covenant?

(b)In the New Covenant what happens between us an God? (Hebrews 8:10) He becomes our God and we become His people.

MARRIAGE
PARTS 1 AND 2
(Discipleship Questions)

Read Genesis 2:18

1. Did the Lord God think that it was good for man to be alone?
2. What did He decide to do for Adam?

Read Genesis 2:21-24

3. How did the Lord create Woman?
4. Why is she called Woman?
5. Whom shall a man leave when he marries his wife?
6. What happens to the two of them once they are joined?
7. Are they joined and made one by a marriage certificate or by God? (Circle one)

Read Psalm 128:1-4

8. What are you if you fear the Lord?
9. If you fear the Lord, what will you do according to verse 1?
10. What two things "shall" you be when you eat the labor of your hands?
A. _____ B. _____
11. Describe what your wife will be like.
12. What will your children be like?

Read Proverbs 12:4

13. What is an excellent wife like to her husband?
14. What is a wife who causes shame?

Read Proverbs 18:22

15. What do you have if you find a wife?
16. What do you obtain from the Lord?

Read Proverbs 19:14

17. What two things are an inheritance from your father?
A. _____ B. _____
18. What do you receive from your Heavenly Father?

Read Ephesians 5:22-33

19. How is the wife to be toward her own husband?
20. What is the husband to the wife?
21. What is Christ to the church?
22. If the church is subject to Christ, how is the wife to be toward her husband?
23. How is the husband to love his wife?
24. How much do you think Christ loves the church?
25. By what are we sanctified, cleansed, and washed?
26. What was the purpose of cleansing us?
27. In verse 28, how are husbands to love their own wives?
28. Is this a selfless act or a selfish act? (Circle one) refer to verse 29
29. Verse 33 recaps the marriage passage. How is the husband to love his wife?
30. How is a wife to treat her husband?

Read Colossians 3:18-19

31. How are wives to be toward their husbands?
32. How are husbands to be toward their wives?

Read 1 Peter 3:1-9

33. How are wives to win their husbands to the Lord?
34. What is the wife's instruction regarding outward adornments?
35. What things are considered "very precious in the sight of the Lord" in regards to a woman's beauty?

36. How did the holy women who trusted in God adorn themselves?
37. How are husbands to dwell with their wives?
38. If we are dwelling in unity with one another, what will the result of our prayers be?

Read Proverbs 31:10-31

39. Whether you are a wife, or you are looking for one, this Proverb gives sound advice and wise instruction to both man and woman. As you read this passage, mark in our Bible those virtues that a wife is to have.
40. If you are a wife, ask the Lord to lead you and guide you in conforming the patterns of your life around this passage.

Read Psalm 112

41. Whether you are a husband, or looking for one, this passage gives a road map of how a man should conduct himself within his family and the world.
42. If you are a husband, ask the Lord to lead you and guide you in conforming your life around His Word, and to show you how to walk in the fear of the Lord.

MARRIAGE
PARTS 1 AND 2
DISCIPLESHIP ANSWER KEY

- | | |
|-----------------------------------|---|
| 1. No | 21. The head |
| 2. Make him a helper | 22. Subject to him |
| 3. From the rib of Adam | 23. Just as Christ loved the church |
| 4. Because she was taken from man | 24. Beyond measure |
| 5. His father and mother | 25. By the Word |
| 6. They become one flesh | 26. To present us to Himself a glorious church
without spot or wrinkle, holy without blemish |
| 7. God | 27. As their own bodies |
| 8. Blessed | 28. Selfless |
| 9. Walk in His ways | 29. As himself |
| 10. A. Happy
B. Well | 30. With respect |
| 11. Fruitful vine | 31. Submissive as is fitting in the Lord |
| 12. Olive plants | 32. Love them and not be bitter towards them |
| 13. A crown | 33. With their conduct |
| 14. Rottenness in his bones | 34. Let your life be more than just outward
adornments, let your heart shine forth |
| 15. A good thing | 35. A gentle quiet spirit |
| 16. Favor | 36. By being submissive to their husbands |
| 17. A. Houses
B. Riches | 37. With understanding, giving them honor |
| 18. A prudent wife | 38. They won't be hindered |
| 19. Submissive | |
| 20. The head | |

MARRIAGE
PART 2
CHANGED NAMES
(Additional Information)

Did you know that in a true marriage relationship the names are changed? My wife, Wendy, used to be Wendy Sellon and now she is Wendy Krow. She used to have her own bank account and now she has mine. I go to work and when I get my paycheck, I don't know where it goes because it goes into her hands. God has said that the women are to guide the house. Wendy's ability to function in guiding the house, buying the groceries, driving the car and putting gas in it, really comes through my ability. She's doing what God has called her to do through my resources and strength when she signs my name on those checks because we're no longer two, we're one.

We're no longer separate entities going separate ways but we are one, and the expression of our oneness is found in our children. Our son has some of me in him, but he also has some of her. He looks like me, and he looks like her. He has my qualities in him, but he also has her qualities. We've born fruit from our union of oneness.

What does the Bible say in Romans 7:4? It says that we're dead to the law. We're married to a new husband, Jesus Christ Himself, and that we should bear fruit unto God. There's going to be an expression of bearing fruit unto God. There's going to be an expression of Christ on this earth. But it's not me alone, and it's not Jesus Christ by Himself in spirit form walking upon the earth. He uses me as a vessel and we're in union together. The Bible says we are co-laborers together with Him (1 Corinthians 3:9). We're bearing fruit unto God and it's an expression of something that's sweet and something that's pleasing in the Father's eyes. I'm married to another so I should bring forth fruit unto God. Under the law I had no ability to bring forth fruit. I was impotent, so to speak, under the law because my strength was limited by my own ability to do things.

Do you know what the real root of sin is? It's independence. It's being self-sufficient; it's self. The original temptation in Genesis was not to be like the devil, it was to be like God. The temptation was to eat of the tree and be like God. Didn't God tell us to be like Him? The trouble is, God doesn't want us to be like Him independently of Him. I'm in a marriage relationship, and the only way that I can be like Him is by being joined in this union of divine oneness. Now I've taken on His name, "Christian." I've become one in spirit, according to 1 Corinthians 6:17. "But he that is joined unto the Lord is [not become one in flesh, but] one spirit" My spirit and God's spirit have been united into one through Jesus Christ. The fruit I bear has to be produced through His strength and ability.

First Ruling Principle in Marriage: Joining

There are two ruling principles in this marriage relationship between Christ and me. These same principles exist in my physical marriage on this earth as well. The first principle is that marriage in scripture means a joining, a oneness, a uniting: “What God has joined together, let no man put asunder” (Matthew 19:6). “The two shall become one flesh” (Ephesians 5:31). “The two shall cleave and become one flesh” (Matthew 19:5). What does the word “cleave” mean? In Hebrew it means “to stick to; to adhere to.” It also means “to pursue.”

The command was given to the man to pursue, cleave and stick to the woman like glue. Why? Because the man is the lover in this relationship and the woman is the responder. The woman will respond to the way the man loves. Submission is not blind obedience. Submission is won through the love of the man, just as Jesus became the head of the church and gave Himself for the church, and won the right to have our submission.

If I love my wife, I'll give her tokens of my affection and love. They may be gifts or flowers, or ways of meeting her needs by giving her spending money, providing for her, giving her the security of a home, or expressions of affection that are not necessarily of a sexual nature. Women just need affection. When I do that for my wife, she doesn't get upset with me and say, “I want a divorce.” You know why? My wife doesn't want a divorce when I provide for her, give her security and affection, verbally express my love for her and do these other things. She wants to respond in kind to those acts of love. God made her as a woman to be a responder. God says that this kind of relationship where one responds to acts of love is just a model of His real, eternal relationship with us as responders!

Do you know what I think eternity will be? Eternity will be an endless unfolding of divine love. I believe that the relationship I have right now with the Lord is truly an engagement relationship. In the New Testament, when Mary and Joseph were espoused, it meant that in the eyes of the law they were married, even though it was not consummated. The engagement period was called marriage, and it took a divorce even to break an engagement. Paul said to the church “I want to present you as a pure virgin unto Christ, wholly and exclusively unto Him.” (2 Corinthians 11:2). This marriage relationship is going to be consummated at the marriage supper of the Lamb. I believe that all throughout eternity there's going to be an unfolding of love. God designed a little, physical scale model on earth with the man as the lover and the woman as the responder. And just as she'll respond back with love if she's given love, God has said, “I want you to know that you loved Me because I first loved you” (1 John 4:19). The Bible doesn't say that we just started loving God on our own. The Bible says that we love Him because He first loved us. In Ezekiel 16:8 God says, “Now when I passed by thee, and looked upon thee, behold, thy time was the time of love; and I spread my skirt over thee, and covered thy nakedness: yea, I swore unto thee, and entered into a covenant with thee, saith the Lord GOD, and thou becamest mine.” He gave us a picture of marriage in this verse, but He likened it to bringing us into a relationship with Him.

This is the first principle in marriage: anywhere in scripture that it talks about marriage, it's talking about joining together as one, but marriage is more than that. If a man went into a prostitute, the Bible says he'd become one body with her, but that doesn't mean he's married to her. He would be sinning against this principle of marriage. He'd be sinning against his mate or future mate, and also

against the design and definition of marriage. Marriage is a joining together in the fullest sense—in a sense of spirit to spirit, soul to soul, and body to body—especially for a believer. That’s why God says, “Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath light with darkness?” (2 Corinthians 6:14). In a Christian marriage, you have the potential of bringing Christ not only into the marriage but into the union of spirit to spirit, soul to soul, and body to body. That’s what is so powerful for Christian couples in this relationship. The Bible says that if I go out and join myself to a harlot, I actually join Christ to the harlot because I am a member of Christ’s body (2 Corinthians 6:15). However, if I consider this same dynamic in a positive light—I’m bringing Christ into my marriage relationship, inviting Christ into, and joining Christ to every aspect of my marriage union. That potential is the strongest potential in the world!

Joining Involves a Covenant

Marriage is more than just a joining together, because this joining together involves a covenant. Sexual intercourse is not marriage. Sexual intercourse is a consummation of marriage, and marriage is a joining together and becoming one in the fullest possible way, but it’s only done in covenant. The Hebrew word for this covenant is “BERIYTH” (ber-eeth) and it’s the most binding contract that is possible. It’s even used with the shedding of blood or cutting an animal into pieces. It involves blood. It involves the two becoming one. The closest concept we have is two becoming blood brothers and marriage is it. It’s becoming one under a covenant and a vow. It’s the vow and the covenant that keep me moving in the area of love toward my wife.

Love is Not a Feeling

The Bible never teaches you to love only when you feel like loving. The problem is that we don’t feel like it often enough. The world isn’t full of love, is it? The Bible doesn’t say to feel like loving and then love. The Bible commands me to love and my feelings will follow. Husbands love your wives as Christ loved the church—that’s the commandment (Ephesians 5:25).

If I thought that love was just a feeling or an emotion I might say, “I want to be with you because I feel good when I’m with you.” What if that was my only concept of love? It is a form of love, but it’s not the kind of love that God commands us to have. God says, “love your enemies, bless those who curse you, do good to those who hate you, pray for those who spitefully use you and persecute you” (Matthew 5:44).

If I thought love was just a warm feeling I’d be saying, “God, do you mean I have to have a warm feeling of love and affection for somebody who slaps me in the face, persecutes me, hates me, and slanders me? That’s impossible.” The Bible didn’t say to love when you feel love.

For example, two singles want to be united in matrimony. We ask the man, “Do you solemnly promise and vow that you will love this woman, you’ll take her as your wife, cherish her and honor her?” And the man vows, “Yes, I do.” Then she says her vows. So we pronounce them man and wife and they go on their way. Suppose a few years later, or maybe after only one year, they come back and they’re having problems in their marriage. She says, “He doesn’t love me. He doesn’t show me any affection or kindness. He just doesn’t love me.” We ask him, “Is this true?” And he replies, “Yes, that’s right.” Why does this happen?

I used to think that if I taught my children enough Bible verses, when they got older they would “not depart from the Lord” and everything would be fine. Then one day I discovered that it wasn’t going to be some Bible verse that I made my son memorize that would carry him through life. It’s what he experiences in my home that he’s going to take out into his life. I know because what I experienced in my home is what I took out into my life.

If you came from a dysfunctional home and you’ve never seen love expressed in acts of kindness and affection, if you’ve never heard your father or mother ever say “I love you” to each other, then it won’t matter if you come into marriage and vow to love your spouse for the rest of your life. If you’ve never seen your parents hug or kiss, or you never saw your father give a gift to your mother just because he wanted to, then you will have no concept of what I’m talking about. You will have no concept at all about what I mean by love or how to be loving to someone. Even if you vow to do it, in just a matter of months your marriage will break down and start falling to pieces. You see, my son is going to take out of my home what he’s seen in my home, what he’s felt in my home and what he’s experienced in my home. If he never experienced it, then he can’t take it with him.

Second Ruling Principle in Marriage: Love

We’ve seen the principle of marriage that is a uniting together which first involves a covenant. This small-scale model of the relationship here on earth between a husband and wife is the same kind of relationship that is to be found eternally in the heavens. It’s a joining, an unfolding of a love for all eternity. And it’s a joining process of God’s covenant to be one with me forever. He says, “This is the covenant that I will make with you—your sin and iniquity I’ll remember no more. I’ll put myself on the inside of you, I’ll be merciful to you in your unrighteousness, and your sin and iniquity I’ll remember no more. I’ll be your God and you will be My people. I swear to you, this is what I will do” (Hebrews 8:10, 12).

A covenant is a binding and solemn promise, agreement or vow. It’s binding because God is not a man that He should lie (Numbers 23:19). I can violate all of these principles of oneness that God is trying to show me about Himself. I can violate them on earth but I’m talking about something that He is trying to get across to me in an eternal way. Marriage is a joining and a oneness that involves a covenant. It’s a covenant of love, because love is the ruling principle of this covenant. What’s the ruling principle of my covenant with this woman in marriage? It’s love. What is the ruling principle of her submission to me? It’s love. What’s the ruling principle of me providing for her, nourishing her, and cherishing her as my own body? It’s the principle of love.

The Bible says, “For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the church . . . This is a great mystery (the relationship of marriage): but I speak concerning Christ and the church” (Ephesians 5:29,32). Have you ever thought about that? No man ever hated his own flesh. I used to think people who had poor self images and committed suicide hated their flesh, but the Bible says that no man ever hated his own flesh. He nourishes and cherishes it even as Christ cherished the church. Husbands are to love their wives in the same way. Do you know what that phrase, “nourished and cherished” means? Let’s say it’s getting chilly in the room you’re sitting in now. You’ll probably put a jacket on, and when you do you’ll nourish your body. You don’t just say, “I love being cold. I’m going to go outside and stand in the snow because it feels so good.” In a few

hours you are most likely going to nourish and cherish your body with a meal because it's the natural thing to do. You're not going to starve yourself. Do you know that's the kind of love God called me to in my marriage relationship? I'll be saying, "Are you cold, Honey? Here's your coat. Do you need food? Here it is."

While it's natural for me to nourish and cherish my body, it's not natural for me to nourish and cherish my wife. Why? Because the principle of sin came into the first marriage. It didn't come into the first church, it came into the first marriage. In Genesis 3, when sin entered into creation and into the marriage, all of a sudden what was natural was no longer natural. Why? Because the root of sin in my life caused me to go astray and turn to my own way. "All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way" (Isaiah 53:6). So now I'm independent. Now I want to do things my way.

You see, it's not natural to love. Someone might disagree, "I beg your pardon," they'll say, "I want to be with her. I just want to be around her." Well, wait until they've been married for a little while, because there's this principle of sin that causes independence in people; they want to go their own way and do their own thing. They don't care if they hurt someone else. There's some type of dysfunction in every family like this. Perhaps you never saw affection, or expressions of kindness and love in your home. There's only one way to love with the kind of love God's Word talks about, because it's not natural; it has to be learned. It's going to have to come from believing and acting on God's Word.

What is Love?

First John 5:3 says, "For this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments. . . ." 2 John 6 says, "And this is love, that we walk after his commandments." If I were to ask someone to describe love he might say, "Love is a warm feeling, it's tender affection, it gives me goose bumps." But God says, "Brothers and Sisters, this is love. You live and you walk in My principles and My commandments." Then you have to learn the principles. Romans 13 says those principles of love will never harm anyone: "Love does no wrong to anyone. Therefore love is a fulfilling of the law" (Romans 13:10). When you walk in God's principles, you'll be walking in love. Love is kind, that means generous, that means giving, that means being unselfish, and that means seeking the best for someone else. God says, "This is love. Walk after these principles."

Someone might say, "I've never seen it in my home. I don't know what God's talking about." Well, I'll show it to you right here. Matthew 7:12 says, "Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them." Here it is in written form. When Jesus said, "It is written," in the Greek it meant, "Say it again." God is telling us, "I'm saying it to you again. And this is what I'm saying, "Whatever you want someone to do for you, that's what you do for them."

Why can't we love? Because we're caught in this principle of sin, and this principle of sin is selfish. If someone sitting home alone and says, "They don't love me. If they loved me why don't they come over here and visit me? Don't they know I'm hurting? Why don't they come over here and pray for me? They're a bunch of hypocrites down at that church. Why don't they do something? Don't they know I'm hurting? I'm hurting so bad, why doesn't anybody care?"

What has God said? God said, That is the way it works. He says get up out of your pity party and think about what you would want done to you, and then put it into action. Would you want someone to be kind to you? Would you want someone to give a gift to you? Would you want someone to be loving and say kind words to you—not jokes that put you down, but words like, “This is what I like about you”?

Put those principles into action, and do you know what will happen? The love you’ve been desiring will be generated in those people you’ve been ministering to, and it will come back to you in good measure, pressed down, shaken together, and running over (Luke 6:38). To have friends, you have to be friendly (Proverbs 18:24). To have love, you have to give love. God so loved He gave (John 3:16). Love is a verb. Love is an action word. Love can be seen by what it does, not only by the words that are said. 1 John 3:18 says, “let us not love in word, neither in tongue; but in deed and in truth.” It’s good to say that I love you. But if I say, “I love you” yet do things contrary to and opposite of what loving you would be, then I’m lying. Love is an action, it has to be seen. There never comes a time in my marriage when I say to my son, “Stephen, you’re 16 years old now, and I want you to know that I love your mother, Wendy.” He already knows I love his mother because love is an action. It’s the example he sees in our home.

Love Can be Taught

Titus 2:4-5 (NIV) says, “Then they can train (or teach) the younger women to love their husbands and children, to be self controlled and pure, to be busy at home, to be kind.” This says that love is not a feeling, but it’s a principle to be taught by the older women to the younger women in the church. Love is something that’s taught.

Even though you’ve been given these principles, do you know what it’s going to take to be able to walk in them? It’s going to take getting down on your knees and saying, “God, I can’t do it in my own strength or ability.” It goes against the grain of my flesh to honor someone else above myself. It goes against the grain of my flesh to give to another person rather than meeting my own selfish needs. It takes God, who is the source of love, the author of love, and the One who’s saying, “Brothers, I wrote it down because I wanted to show you that if you’re walking in these principles you’re on the right path. Keep looking to Me; I’ll give you divine ideas. I’ll give you creative ideas on how to love others, how to be in love, and how to stay in love, even when you don’t feel like it.”

Jesus didn’t feel like it when He went to the cross. He said, “God, I don’t want to do this. Nevertheless not my will, but Yours be done” (Luke 22:42). Romans 5:8 (NIV) says, “But God demonstrates his own love for us in this: While we were still sinners, Christ died for us.” He demonstrated love. The love that He demonstrated in going to the cross even went against His feelings. He didn’t feel like it, but He chose to operate in the principles of divine love that God gave in the Scriptures. He gave Himself without feeling like it, and as He gave, many of us have given back to Him the feeling of love and appreciation. We generated that love back to Christ when He took a step to love us without feelings.

It can happen in your marriage, too. You can rekindle the flame of love. It can happen in your friendships. It can happen in your job situation. It can happen if you make it your goal. You should make operating in the principles of divine love the most important thing in your life. The next time you come to a decision, just stop and think, "Am I making this decision based on selfishness and what I want, or am I considering others in this decision?" As you continue loving this way, you'll find that the love you've been desiring will be multiplied back to you. Your life will become a demonstration of God's love to the world, and your marriage relationship a fulfillment of God's mystery revealed, an expression of His love for us, and ours for Him.

GOD'S KIND OF LOVE

PART 1

Don Krow

Today we're going to talk about God's kind of love. In 1 Corinthians 13:13 it says this, "Now abideth faith, hope, charity [love], these three; but the greatest of these is charity [love]." Then 1 Corinthians 14:1 says, "Follow after charity [love] and [yet] desire [earnestly] spiritual gifts, but rather that ye may prophesy." The Bible says follow after love, pursue it, make it your highest aim. Some translations say make it your greatest quest. It's the only thing we'll take out of this life into eternity. We won't take our cars, our homes, or our money, but we will take the love that Jesus Christ has imparted into our lives by the Holy Spirit. Love is the only thing that has eternal value and substance.

What does love really mean? I say I love my wife, I love ice cream, I love apple pie. There's only one word in English to describe love; so when I say I love my wife and then say I love the cat, is my wife impressed? Not at all. Do you see what I'm saying? When we use the word love, some people think it means sex, some think it means an intense warm feeling—people have all kinds of definitions for love. In the Greek language there are four major words. One is "eros," which really is not used in the Bible, and is defined as sexual attraction or sexual love. God ordained that kind of love when He said a man shall leave his father and mother, cleave to his wife, and they shall become one flesh. The book in the Bible entitled Song of Solomon is about sexual love that God has restricted to the marriage relationship. The other kinds of love, God says, are free to be used by all mankind, but this kind is restricted to the marriage relationship.

Another kind of love is called "storge" and is the natural bond or affection in a family relationship. Then there is "philia," which comes from the root word "phileo." This word is used about seventy-two times in the New Testament and means a warm feeling of affection that comes and goes in intensity. Most people who talk about love think that is what love really is, so "I fall in love and I fall out of love." If your marriage is built on that kind of love, there will be times when you have a high and times when you have a low—you could fall in love and out of love based on that.

The Bible says we're to love each other with God's kind of love, which is "agape" love. What is "agape" love? There are many facets, and 1 Corinthians 13 gives the whole definition of what love involves. In 1 John 5:3 it says, "For this is the love of God, that we keep His commandments." Jesus' commandments show us expressions of love, but if I were going to sum it up, I would use Matthew 7:12, "Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets." It's not a matter of all those people down at the church don't love me, don't care about me, and this and that. No, the Bible says whatever you would want someone to do to you, you do to them first. That is love. It goes against our flesh, against our natural grain to seek the welfare and benefit of other people above ourselves. It takes God. Don't think I'm saying this can be manifested without God. The Bible says the fruit of the Spirit is love, and God is love. He is the source of love and the one who will show us how to love through His commandments. He's the one who will give us strength, even in light of our flesh, to make the right choices and decisions and act on the right principles.

I work at Andrew Wommack Ministries, and one day a few years back I wanted to go and pray as I usually do after work. I was in a park, and I said, "God, I really want to minister to somebody." It was a fairly warm day, and I saw a little boy and a little girl sitting on the swings. There was a swing open and I thought, "I'll go over there and be a swinger," so I went over and got on the swing. I turned to the little girl and said, "It's a nice day, isn't it?" She said, "Me no speak English," and I asked, "Where are you from?" She said she was from Romania. I knew there were Romanians in that area and I saw these people looking at me, probably wondering why I was talking to their children. I went over and said, "I want to help you." They said, "You would want to help us? Why would you want to help us? You don't even know us!" I said, "Because God wants to help you." I had been meditating on the principles of love in 1 John 3:18 where it says, "Let us not love in word, neither in tongue; but in deed and in truth." We're not to love with the words of our mouths only, but also with our actions. Although I usually don't carry money around with me, that day I had a little in my pocket. I reached out, said, "This is for you," and gave them the money. Since I'd been fasting that day, I had a little bit of food with me, so I said, "And here's some food for your family." They were touched and said, "Who are you?" I told them, "God has made a divine appointment for us to meet today, and I am going see you again."

I went home and told my wife about the encounter with those Romanians. I took a roast out of our freezer and cooked it. The next day I bought a box full of dishes at a garage sale and went back to the park with my wife. The Romanians and their children were there, and I said, "I bring gifts to you. They're heavy, so I'm going to get in my car, and if you'll show me where you live, I'll take the gifts to your home." When we got to their little one-bedroom apartment, I took the dishes and silverware—everything matched—out of the box and began to give things to them, one at a time. As I handed it to them, tears began to roll down their faces, and the lady said, "Me going to cry! Me going to cry!" I said, "On Monday night we have a Bible study at our home, and I would like to invite you there." They said, "We want to come," but I said, "I don't want you to come because I gave you gifts." They said, "No, we want to come and meet your friends."

Since they didn't have transportation, I picked them up, took them to my home, and before long God began to touch them. They couldn't speak English very well, but He touched them when we prayed for them. They began to be delivered and set free from things because the love of God was being manifested to them. Before long we met another Romanian couple, and I said to the first couple, "Will you go and help me meet another Romanian couple?" They agreed and I got a call one day from them, "Mr. Don, we heard about you. We have the lonelies bad, and we want to meet you." So I took my Romanian friends and went to meet them. I took gifts, food, and all kinds of things to them. As I did that and began to visit with them, everything was great until one of the first Romanian couple said, "You need to go to the Bible study. They talk about Jesus, and it's wonderful!" They said, "Wait a minute! We came from a communist country and don't know if there's a God. We don't want this Jesus stuff."

I said "Let me be a friend," and began to take them out on the weekends and buy them clothes, coats, and things they needed. They were very embarrassed and reluctant. "Well, don't you need a coat?" "Well, yes I do, but . . ." "Then let's get this coat for you." I began to love them in action, but they wouldn't come to our Bible study until I said, "There are probably some Americans there who will help you get a job." Then they came right away. At the Bible study that night I said something very foolish to the Lord, "Lord, you're going to have to give me a genuine gift of tongues tonight because we can't even communicate with each other very well." There were some Americans at the Bible study that night who gave their testimonies. When I began to speak, the lady from the second Romanian couple began to lighten up, and

I knew something was happening. After the study I said, “Let me pray for you,” and as we prayed, God suddenly touched them and filled the whole atmosphere of the room with His love. Then the lady said, “You know, when the Americans were speaking, I couldn’t understand anything they were saying, but when you got up and started speaking about Jesus and His love for us, and what he did so we could have a relationship with Him, I understood every word you said! I understood it perfectly! It must be God! It must be God!” As a result, lives were changed, not just the Romanians.

Let me tell you what happened then. My home began to be filled on Monday nights with international people—Romanians, Bulgarians, and people from Russia. God was changing lives, and they knew we loved them. We even had people from Africa. Though we could hardly speak to each other, one thing they knew: when we prayed, God would manifest Himself to them. They also knew that I would do anything for them and that I loved them. God changed their lives and the lives of many other people, and I want to tell you how it happened. It happened because one day in a park I saw some people of another color, another nationality. I didn’t have any warm feeling of affection, but I knew that love was this: whatever you would want someone to do to you, do to them. I sought their welfare and benefit regardless of the way I felt, and you know what happened? They so appreciated it, that what rose up in them was “philia” love, the love that had feelings for me, and they began to say to me, “I love you,” and hug me and kiss me. What it did in me was generate that kind of feeling for them. If you want to have a love that has feelings in your life, practice the godly love. Seek the welfare and benefit of others regardless of how you feel.

God bless you as you meditate on this teaching today.

GOD'S KIND OF LOVE

PART 1

(Outline)

1 Corinthians 13:13-14:1 says, "And now abideth faith, hope, charity, these three; but the greatest of these is charity. Follow after charity, and desire spiritual gifts, but rather that ye may prophesy."

According to the Bible, we are to pursue love and make it our aim, our greatest quest.

The love of Jesus Christ, that has been imparted to us by the Holy Spirit, is the only thing we will take out of this life into eternity. It has eternal value.

In the Greek language there are four major words for love:

1. Eros: A sexual attraction, sexual oneness, which God has restricted to a marriage relationship.
2. Storge: A natural affection or bond one has in a family relationship.
3. Phileo: A warm feeling of affection that comes and goes with intensity. This is the kind that most people think real love is.
4. Agape: God's kind of love.
 - A. 1 Corinthians 13:4-7 says, "Charity suffereth long, and is kind; charity envieth not; charity vaunteth not itself, is not puffed up, ⁵Doth not behave itself unseemly, seeketh not her own, is not easily provoked, thinketh no evil; ⁶Rejoiceth not in iniquity, but rejoiceth in the truth; ⁷Beareth all things, believeth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things."
 - B. 1 John 5:3 says, "For this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments: and his commandments are not grievous." Jesus' commandments show us expressions of love.
 - C. Matthew 7:12 says, "Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets." Seeking the welfare and benefit of others above ourselves.

It takes God to love others, because it goes against our natural tendency to seek the welfare of another above ourselves.

God is love, and the source of love. He, through His commandments, will show us how to love and give us the strength to love—even taking into consideration the limitations of our flesh—so we can make the right choices and act upon the right principles.

1 John 3:18 says, “My little children, let us not love in word, neither in tongue; but in deed and in truth.”

Our love for God and others is demonstrated by our actions.

GOD'S KIND OF LOVE
PART 1
(Teacher's Guide)

1. What is God's love summed up in? (1 John 5:3)

In keeping His commandments.

2. Explain how the commandments in Romans 13:9-10 are summed up in love.

Love works no wrong to his neighbor. Each commandment shows love by showing how we should respond to our neighbor.

3. How can we love our enemies, even when we don't feel like it? (Romans 12:19-21)

If our enemy is hungry, we can feed him; if he is thirsty, we can give him something to drink. We can seek the welfare and benefit of others, regardless of how we feel.

4. How does Titus 2:4 show us that love can be taught and is just not a feeling?

According to this verse, women can be taught to love their husbands and children. It's not just a feeling.

5. A. Describe the principles of 1 Corinthians 13:4-7: "Love is very patient and kind, never jealous or envious, never boastful or proud, never haughty or selfish or rude. Love does not demand its own way. It is not irritable or touchy. It does not hold grudges and will hardly even notice when others do it wrong. It is never glad about injustice, but rejoices whenever truth wins out. If you love someone you will be loyal to him no matter what the cost. You will always believe in him, always expect the best of him, and always stand your ground in defending him" (The Living Bible).

B. How could these characteristics be put to practice in your life?

6. According to 1 John 3:18, how must we practice love?

Let us not love only with our words, but also in our actions.

GOD'S KIND OF LOVE
PART 1
(Detailed Teacher's Guide)

Note: The following information may be read out loud (a numbered section at a time) with the person(s) being disciplined. After each numbered section is read, pause and ask the question(s) that correspond to the paragraph(s), and then discuss them.

¹ The Bible never teaches you to love only when you feel like loving. The problem is that we don't feel like it often enough. The world isn't full of love, is it? The Bible doesn't say to feel like loving and then love. The Bible commands me to love and my feelings will follow. Husbands love your wives as Christ loved the church—that's the commandment (Ephesians 5:25).

² If I thought that love was just a feeling or an emotion I might say, "I want to be with you because I feel good when I'm with you." What if that was my only concept of love? It is a form of love, but it's not the kind of love that God commands us to have. God says, "I'm telling you to love your enemies. Bless those who curse you, do good to those who hate you, pray for those who despitefully use you" (Matthew 5:44).

If I thought love was just a warm feeling I'd be saying, "God, do you mean I have to have a warm feeling of love and affection for somebody who slaps me in the face, persecutes me, hates me, and slanders me? That's impossible." But the Bible didn't say to love when you feel love.

³ Let's say two singles want to be united in matrimony. We ask the man, "Do you solemnly promise and vow that you will love this woman, you'll take her as your wife, cherish her and honor her?" And the man vows, "Yes, I do." Then she says her vows. So we pronounce them man and wife and they go on their way. Suppose a few years later, or maybe after only one year, they come back and they're having problems in their marriage. She says, "He doesn't love me. He doesn't show me any affection or kindness. He just doesn't love me." We ask him, "Is this true?" And he replies, "Yes, that's right." Why does this happen?

¹ (a) What is God's Love summed up in according to 1 John 5:3?

(b) Explain how the commandments in Romans 13:9-10 are summed up in love?

² How can we love our enemies, even when we don't feel like it? (see Romans 12:19-21)

³ How does Titus 2:4 show us that love can be taught and is not just a feeling?

⁴ I used to think that if I taught my children enough Bible verses, when they got older they would “not depart from the Lord” and everything would be fine. Then one day I discovered that it wasn’t going to be some Bible verse that I made my son memorize that would carry him through life. It’s what he experiences in my home that he’s going to take out into his life. I know because what I experienced in my home is what I took out into my life.

If you come from a dysfunctional home and you’ve never seen love or you’ve never seen expressions of kindness and affection, if you never heard your father or mother ever say, “I love you” to each other, then it won’t matter if you come to marriage and vow to love your spouse for the rest of your life. If you’ve never seen your parents hug or kiss, or you never saw your father give a gift to your mother just because he wanted to, you have no concept of what I’m talking about. You have no concept at all about what I mean by love or how to be loving to someone. Even if you vow to do it, in just a matter of months your marriage will break down and start falling to pieces. You see, my son is going to take out of my home what he’s seen in my home, what he’s felt in my home and what he’s experienced in my home. If he never experienced it, then he can’t take it with him.

⁵ Perhaps you never saw affection, or expressions of kindness and love in your home. There’s only one way to love with God’s kind of love, it has to be learned. It’s going to have to come from God’s Word.

⁴(a) Describe the principles of 1 Corinthians 13:4-7.

(b) How could these be put to practice in your life?

⁵ According to 1 John 3:18, how must we practice love?

GOD'S KIND OF LOVE
PART 1
(Discipleship Questions)

Abide: to continue, dwell, endure, remain, tarry, persevere, to stay behind, steadfast continuance, to lodge in, to establish, to appoint, to hold fast.

Read John 15:9

1. How does Jesus love us?
2. What does Jesus command us to do in His love?
3. Do you think God loves Jesus with an infinite and all encompassing kind of love?
4. Do you realize that Jesus loves you with that same measure of love?

Read John 15:12-13

5. What is Christ commanding us to do?
6. Is this optional?
7. What is "greater love" according to this verse?
8. What did Christ do for you on the cross?
9. Do you recognize the depth with which Jesus loves you, to have given His very life for you?
10. Praise God for His love toward you right now!

Read Romans 8:35-39

11. List the seven things mentioned in verse 35 that shall not separate us from the love of Christ.
 - A. _____
 - B. _____
 - C. _____
 - D. _____
 - E. _____
 - F. _____
 - G. _____
12. Verse 37 gives us much confidence. What are we through Christ Who loves us?

13. List all the things in verses 38-39 that “shall not be able to separate us from the love of God which is in Jesus our Lord.”

A. _____ nor _____

B. _____ nor _____

C. _____ nor _____ nor _____

D. _____ nor _____ nor _____

Do you believe Him?

Read Galatians 2:20

14. If you are born again, who have you been crucified with?

15. In Christ, do you live for yourself?

16. Why did Jesus give His life for you?

Read Ephesians 3:16-19

17. According to the “riches of His glory,” what is Paul praying that we might be?

18. Where does Christ want to dwell?

19. What makes it possible for Him to dwell there?

20. What are we to be “rooted and grounded” in?

21. What is it that Paul is praying that we may comprehend?

22. What is it that we are to “know” so that we may be filled with all the fullness of God?

23. Who do you think the “fullness of God” is?

Read 1 Timothy 1:12-14

24. How did Christ show His love toward Paul?

“He counted me _____, putting me into the _____, although I was formerly a _____, a _____, and an _____ man.”

25. Were we deserving by man’s standard to receive this great reward?

26. Praise God He doesn’t use man’s standard to judge us!!

Read 1 John 3:23

27. What are we commanded to do?

Read 1 John 4:7-11

28. (Verse 7) Why should we love one another?
29. Do we know God if we do not love?
30. Why not?
31. How was the “love of God manifested toward us”?
32. (Verse 10) “In this is love, _____.”
33. What are we called to do “if God loved us”?

Read John 13:34-35

34. What is the “new commandment” that Christ gives to us?
35. How are we to love one another?
36. How will others recognize that we are “disciples” of Christ?

Read John 13:1

37. How long will Christ love those who are His?

Read John 14:21

38. If we love Christ, what will we do?
39. If we love Jesus, by Whom else will we be loved?
40. In verse 21 Jesus promises us to do what, if we love him?

MANIFEST: to show, appear, to cause to shine, uncover, make clear, lay bare.

Read John 14:22-24

41. What question did Judas ask of Jesus?
42. Jesus’ response was that if we loved Him, we would do what?
43. Who will come and make their home with us, and dwell in us, when we keep His Word?
44. Whose Word is it that we are hearing? God the Father or Jesus the Son

Read Romans 5:8

- 45. How did God demonstrate His love toward us?

Read Romans 13:9-10

- 46. What is the only thing we are to owe one another?
- 47. What is the one commandment that fulfills all other commandments?
- 48. Does love harm your neighbor?
- 49. Is love the fulfillment of the law?

Read Romans 12:19-21

- 50. Are we to avenge ourselves?
- 51. To Whom does vengeance belong?
- 52. "Therefore," how are we to treat our enemy?
- 53. How do we overcome evil?
- 54. Can we love our enemy without feeling like it?

ADMONISH: to train, to teach, to put in mind, impart positive truth, to advise, instruct.

Read Titus 2:4

- 55. Can love be taught, or is it just a natural feeling?

Read 1 Corinthians 13:1-8

- 56. In the appropriate column, list what love is, and what love is not. For every negative example, write also its opposite.

WHAT LOVE IS

WHAT LOVE IS NOT

Read 1 John 3:18

57. How are we to love one another?

Read 1 John 5:1-5

58. What must we do to be “born of God”

59. How is it we are able to love others?

60. How do we know that we love God?

61. Are God’s commandments burdensome?

62. If we are born of God, what are we able to overcome?

63. What is the victory that has overcome the world?

64. Who is he who has overcome the world?

GOD'S KIND OF LOVE
PART 1
(Discipleship Answer Key)

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1. As the Father loves Him | 17. To be strengthened with might through His Spirit |
| 2. Abide | 18. In your hearts |
| 3. Yes | 19. Faith |
| 4. Yes | 20. Love |
| 5. Love one another as He has loved us | 21. What is the width, depth, length, and height of His love for us |
| 6. No | 22. The love of Christ |
| 7. To lay down your life for your friends | 23. Jesus Christ |
| 8. Laid down His life for me | 24. Faithful – ministry – blasphemer – persecutor insolent (injurious) |
| 9. Yes | 25. No |
| 10. Praise God! | 26. Yes, praise God! |
| 11. A. Tribulation
B. Distress
C. Persecution
D. Famine
E. Nakedness
F. Peril
G. Sword | 27. Believe on the name of Jesus and love one another |
| 12. More than conquerors | 28. Because God loves us |
| 13. A. Death nor life
B. Angels nor principalities
C. Powers nor things present nor things to come
D. Height nor depth nor any created thing
Yes | 29. No |
| 14. Christ | 30. Because God is love |
| 15. No | 31. God sent His only Son so that we might live through Him |
| 16. Because He loved me | 32. Not that we loved God, but that He loved us; Jesus was the propitiation of our sins |
| | 33. To love one another |
| | 34. To love one another |

35. As Christ loved us
36. If we have love for one another
37. To the end
38. Keep His commandments
39. The Father
40. Manifest Himself to us
41. How would Jesus manifest Himself to us and not the world
42. Keep His word
43. The Father, Son, and Holy Spirit
44. God the Father
45. Christ died for us while we were sinners
46. Love
47. To love your neighbor as yourself
48. No
49. Yes
50. No
51. The Lord
52. Feed him, give him drink – with love
53. With good
54. Yes
55. It can be taught
56. What love is: patient, rejoices in truth, believes, bears, hopes, and endures all things, never fails. What love is not: envious, proud, arrogant, rude selfish, provoked, evil.
57. In deed and truth
58. Believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God
59. When we love God and keep His commands.
60. We keep His commandments
61. No
62. The world
63. Our faith
64. Jesus--the Son of God

GOD'S KIND OF LOVE PART 1 (Additional Information)

One of the most striking differences to me between the world's love and God's kind of love is that you can teach yourself to operate in God's love. Titus 2:4 says that the older women are to teach the younger women "to love their husbands, to love their children." Carnal love is completely motivated by the emotions or senses, but God's love comes from the heart, and although the feelings are definitely affected, they don't motivate or deter God's love.

Carnal love is characterized by a naked little fat boy who goes around shooting people with arrows to cause them to "fall" in love or to "fall" out of love. That simply is not true love. God's love is the same yesterday, today, and forever. That is the way God is (Hebrews 13:8) and God is love (1 John 4:8). People who love one minute and then their mood changes and they act the opposite way the next minute simply don't operate in God's love. You may feel like reacting in anger but you can choose to operate in love.

Many people are confused about this and think, "I can't act like I love them when I don't feel it." Oh, yes you can! God's Word tells us to even love our enemies (Matthew 5:44); it is a command. He didn't say to do it if you felt like it. If you will choose to do what God tells you to, your feelings will follow. You can teach yourself to love with God's kind of love.

A person who is truly born again desires to do what God says but doesn't always feel like it. Our feelings have been corrupted by our old life before we came to Christ. Now that we are in Christ, we have His promise that our spirit has been totally changed (2 Corinthians 5:17) and has become like Him. Galatians 5:22 says that love is a fruit of the Spirit. This is speaking specifically of the Holy Spirit but our new man was born of the Spirit, so it has to be true that God's love has been shed abroad in our spirits too. We do have God's love in our new man. Our feelings are not automatically changed, however. Our feelings will continue to act like they were taught to act until we subdue them and bring them under the control of our spirit man. So it is not hypocritical to act in love when you don't feel it. It is actually hypocritical to act on what you feel instead of who you really are in Christ Jesus.

God's kind of love is a choice that you make on the basis of what God said, and then act on it in faith until it becomes a reality in your spirit, soul and body.

GOD'S KIND OF LOVE PART 2

Don Krow

In Part 1, I told you about the Romanian couple I met in the park. I want to tell you a little more about what happened but, before I do, I want to review some of the things we said about God's love. Jesus Christ was the greatest expression of love that ever came on the face of the earth, yet as far as it is recorded in the Bible, He never said the words, "I love you." Isn't that amazing? The greatest expression of love never said, "I love you." Do you know why? It's because love is more action than words. Suppose I said to my wife, "I love you," and then committed adultery all week? Would she believe my words, or would she believe my actions? She'd believe what I do, because ninety-five percent of love is nonverbal; it's not in the things you say.

In 1 John 3:18 we read, "Let us not love in word, neither in tongue [let us not love just with the words of our mouths]; but in deed and in truth." Love is an action word. In Matthew 25:35-36 Jesus describes love for himself by saying, I was hungry, and you fed me, I was thirsty, and you gave me something to drink, I was naked, without any clothing, and you clothed me, I was sick, and you visited me. Then in verse 40 he says, and doing it to the least of these my brethren you've done it unto me. You see, love is an action, something you do, and if you understand it correctly, Hebrews 6:10 says that, "For God is not unrighteous to forget your work and labour of love, which ye have showed toward his name, in that ye have ministered to the saints, and do minister." In Matthew 22 when Jesus was asked what the greatest commandment was, He said it's love for God, and love for our fellow man. These two commandments are really one, because if we understand correctly, Jesus says when you show love to the least of his brethren, you are actually showing it to him. The Bible is teaching that we have an opportunity to love Jesus Christ in practical ways by loving others.

Last time I told you about the Romanians I met in a park seven-and-a-half years ago. Their lives were changed because I sought their welfare and benefit regardless of how I felt. They were a different color and nationality, but I knew that God's love expresses itself when we reach out and seek the welfare and benefit of others like Jesus did. He didn't feel like going to the cross, and said, "Father, if there's any other way, let it be, yet not My will but Yours be done." Jesus sought our welfare and benefit regardless of how He felt. About three weeks ago, I got a call from the Romanians, and they were in tears. They'd been here in the United States for seven-and-a-half years, I helped them get a job, and they now live in Kansas. They said, "We finally got a ruling on our political asylum papers. They're giving us thirty days to make an appeal, and then they're going to deport us." People only have two to five percent chance of ever getting political asylum. They went to a lawyer who handles these cases, and he basically said they didn't have a chance. I said, "I don't know, but I'm going to pray and try to help you." How, I didn't know, but I thought it was a great injustice to send them back—especially to their children, who can barely speak Romanian. They're now teenagers and have forgotten most of their native language.

A friend of mine called our Colorado congressman, who said to contact Senator Sam Brownback in Kansas since they live in Kansas. That was great because I have a friend, Kim, who works for Sam Brownback. I contacted Kim and said, “This is what’s going on, and you’re going to have to help us.” After contacting the Senator, they got about four people in Washington, DC, working on it. The whole community of Sublette, Kansas, about 1,200 people, got behind them, started a petition, got signatures, and over 880 people said, “We want these Romanians here. They’re good people, they pay taxes, and they work hard. We want them here.” There was a full coverage newspaper article about what had happened. It was a miracle, and because there were high officials in our government who understood what was going on, the Romanians got a letter saying the decision was reversed and they could stay in the United States.

I went to Sublette, Kansas. My friends didn’t know I was coming, and when I got there they were on the phone thanking Senator Brownback for helping get their political asylum. He couldn’t be there personally because it was the last day of President Clinton’s impeachment hearing, but ABC and NBC News were there with their cameras. As soon as they hung up, they ran over and hugged me, and the cameras went right over to me. They said, “Who are you, and how do you know these people?” I told them the whole story, how I met them and sought their welfare and benefit because of God and what Jesus said in Matthew 7:12.

We then went to the gymnasium where they had red, white, and blue balloons everywhere and were singing patriotic songs. When my friends came in, everyone started shouting, and they were weeping. The mayor of the city said, “Today, February 12, is going to be Jucan Family Day in honor of these Romanians.” They took an American flag the Senator had flown over the capitol in Washington, DC, in their honor and presented it to them, and also presented them with papers that said they were legally there, basically for the rest of their lives. They all gave a testimony, and then asked me to pray. I said, “There’s one person we haven’t thanked enough yet today, and that’s God Almighty. In a park in Colorado Springs, CO, seven-and-a-half years ago, I was seeking God, telling Him that I wanted to reach out with His love to someone that day and I was led to these Romanians. I then repeated the story, and said, “God wants to help you—welcome to the USA.”

The way it all came about was a miracle. I knew the right people in the right places at the right time. My friend Kim had made arrangements for Senator Brownback to come and meet me at Andrew Womack Ministries a year before all this happened. She said, “You just need to meet Don Krow.” I didn’t know why and I was very uncomfortable. Little did I know that God was setting things up to help a family He had revealed Himself and His love to, simply because of the command of Jesus that what you would want someone to do to you, do to them. It’s a miracle they’ll never forget, and they’ll tell you today, “It’s because of God.” Anka, the Romanian lady, said, “My faith wavered but God is faithful, and He allowed us to stay in the United State of America.”

There are multitudes of people right now who are crying out for love. The only way they can get it is when you and I make the decision to understand the principles of love from God’s Word. Love is kind, love seeks the welfare of others—just like Jesus sought our welfare when He went to the cross. God bless you today as you look more into these principles of what it really means to love with God’s love.

GOD'S KIND OF LOVE PART 2 (Outline)

Jesus was the greatest expression of love. It is not recorded in the Bible that Jesus ever said the words, "I love you."

1 John 3:18 says, "My little children, let us not love in word, neither in tongue; but in deed and in truth." Love is more in action than in words. Ninety-five percent of all love is non-verbal.

Matthew 25:4-5 says, "But the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps. ⁵While the bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept." Love is an action. It is something you do.

Hebrews 6:10 says, "For God is not unrighteous to forget your work and labour of love, which ye have showed toward his name, in that ye have ministered to the saints, and do minister." We show our love to God by helping people.

Matthew 22:37-39 says, "Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. ³⁸This is the first and great commandment. ³⁹And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself." The greatest commandment is love for God and for our fellowman. We can love Jesus in a practical way by loving others.

Jesus sought our welfare and benefit regardless of how He felt, when He went to the cross. God's love expresses itself when we reach out and seek another's welfare.

GOD'S KIND OF LOVE
PART 2
(Teacher's Guide)

1. What does love do according to Matthew 7:12?

Whatever you would want someone to do for you, do unto others.

2. What does Proverbs 18:24 say about having friends?

To have friends you must show yourself friendly.

3. A. If you told your spouse, "I love you" and then went out and committed adultery, what will she believe—your words or your actions?

Your actions.

- B. How does 1 John 3:18 say we are to love?

Not just with words but with actions.

4. Look at Romans 5:6-8—do you think Jesus Christ felt like dying?

No. Yet He sought the benefit and welfare of all of us regardless of how He felt.

5. How does Galatians 5:22 show us our need for dependence upon God to manifest love?

True love is a by-product of dependence upon God. The opposite of love is to be selfish. We must look to God to put others before ourselves.

GOD'S KIND OF LOVE
PART 2
(Detailed Teacher's Guide)

Note: The following information may be read out loud (a numbered section at a time) with the person(s) being disciplined. After each numbered section is read, pause and ask the question(s) that correspond to the paragraph(s), and then discuss them.

¹ First John 5:3 says, "For this is the love of God, that we keep his commandments." Second John 6 says, "And this is love, that we walk after his commandments." If I was to ask someone to describe love he might say, "Love is a warm feeling, it's tender affection, it gives me goose bumps." But God says, "Brothers and Sisters, this is love: When you live and walk in My principles and My commandments." Then you have to learn the principles. Romans 13 says those principles of love will never harm anyone: "Love does no wrong to anyone. Therefore love is a fulfilling of the law" (Romans 13:10). When you walk in God's principles, you'll be walking in love. Love is kind—that means generous, that means giving, that means being unselfish, and that means seeking the best for someone else. God says, "This is love. Walk after these principles."

² Someone might say, "I've never seen it in my home. I don't know what God's talking about." Well, I'll show it to you right here. Matthew 7:12 says, "therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them." Here it is in written form. When Jesus said, "It is written," in the Greek it meant, "Say it again." God's telling us, "I'm saying it to you again. And this is what I'm saying, "Whatever you want someone to do for you, that's what you do for them."

³ Why can't we love? Because we're caught in this principle of sin, and this principle of sin is selfish. If someone sitting there says, "They don't love me. If they loved me then why don't they come over here and visit me? Don't they know I'm hurting? Why don't they come over here and pray for me? They're a bunch of hypocrites down at that church. Why don't they do something? Don't they know I'm hurting? I'm hurting so bad, why doesn't anybody care?"

What has God said? God said, "That is the way it works. He says to get up out of your pity party and think about what you would want done to you, and then put it into action. Would you want someone to be kind to you? Would you want someone to give a gift to you? Would you want someone to be loving and say kind words to you—not jokes that put you down, but words that say, "This is what I like about you?"

¹What is love according to Matthew 7:12?

²Notice what Matthew 7:12 doesn't say, "Try to find the right person," it basically says "become the right person."

³What does Proverbs 18:24 say about having friends?

⁴ Put those principles into action, and do you know what will happen? The love you've been desiring will be generated in those people you've been ministering to, and it will come back to you in good measure, pressed down, shaken together, and running over (Luke 6:38). To have friends, you have to be friendly (Proverbs 18:24). To have love, you have to give love. God so loved He gave (John 3:16). Love is a verb; love is an action word. Love can only be seen by what it does, not by the words that are said. 1 John 3:18 says, "let us not love in word, neither in tongue; but in deed and in truth." It's good to say that I love you. But if I say, "I love you" yet do things opposite of love in deed, then I'm lying. Love is an action, it has to be seen.

⁵ Titus 2:4-5 (NIV) says, "Then they can train (or teach) the younger women to love their husband . . . to be self-controlled and pure, to be busy at home, to be kind." This says that love is not a feeling, but it's a principle to be taught by the older women to the younger women in the church. Love is something that's taught.

Even though you've been given these principles, do you know what it's going to take to be able to walk in them? It's going to take getting down on your knees and saying, "Hey God, I can't do it in my own strength or ability." It goes against the grain of my flesh to honor someone else above myself. It goes against the grain of my flesh to give to another person rather than meeting my own selfish needs. It takes God, who is the source of love, the author of love, and the One who's saying, "Brothers, I wrote it down because I wanted to show you that if you're walking in these principles you're on the right path. Keep looking to Me; I'll give you divine ideas. I'll give you creative ideas on how to love others, how to be in love, and how to stay in love, even when you don't feel like it."

⁴If you told your wife, "I love you!" and then went out and committed adultery, what is she going to believe, your words or your actions?

⁵(a) Look at Romans 5:6-8, do you think Jesus Christ felt like dying? Yet He sought the benefit and welfare of all of us, regardless of how He felt.

(b) How does Galatians 5:22 show us our need for dependence upon God to manifest love?

GOD'S KIND OF LOVE
PART 2
(Discipleship Questions)

Read 1 John 3:16-18

1. How do we know, understand, and perceive the love God has for us?
2. What can we do to show love for our brethren?
3. If you shut your heart to a brother in need, does the Word of God say that God's love abides in you?
4. If we are not to love in word or in tongue only, how are we to love?

Read Hebrews 6:10-12

5. What two things is God not unjust to forget, that you have shown toward His name?
A. _____ B. _____
6. To whom have you ministered by your works and labors of love?
7. Who are the "saints"?

Read Matthew 22:37-39

8. What is the first commandment?
9. What is the second?
10. Can you see how loving your neighbor would give glory to God?

Read Matthew 25:31-46

11. Whom did He set on His right hand? _____ On His left? _____
12. What was the blessing that He gave to His sheep in verse 34
13. "For I was hungry and you gave Me _____;
I was thirsty and you gave Me _____;
I was a stranger and you _____;
I was naked and you _____ Me;
I was sick and you _____ Me;
I was in prison and you _____ Me.
14. What was Jesus' response to the sheep asking about when it was that they saw Him in all these mentioned states?

15. Where did Jesus send the goats?
16. If we do not minister to the least of the brethren, it is as though we are not ministering to Whom?
17. Where will the wicked go?
18. Where will the righteous go?

Read Matthew 7:12

19. What does this Golden Rule say?

Read Luke 6:37-38

20. If you don't want to be judged, what shouldn't you do?
21. If you don't want to be condemned, what shouldn't you do?
22. If you want to be forgiven, what should you do?

Read Proverbs 18:24

23. What must you do to have friends?
24. Who is your friend who sticks closer than a brother?

Read James 1:22-25

25. What are you if you are a hearer of the Word only and not a doer?
26. What will you be if you are not a forgetful hearer of the word?

Read Galatians 6:6-10

27. "Whatever a man sows, that he will also _____."
28. If you sow to the flesh, what will you reap?
29. If you sow to the Spirit, what will you reap?
30. What two things must we not do in order to reap in due season?
A. _____ B. _____
31. What are we to do when we have opportunity
32. "Especially" toward whom?

Read 1 Timothy 6:17-19

- 33. Who are the rich to put their trust in?
- 34. What does God give to us? _____
Why? _____
- 35. Verse 18 commands us to do three things, name them.
 - A. _____
 - B. _____
 - C. _____
- 36. What can we look forward to if we do these things?

Read Hebrews 13:1-6

- 37. Each verse, 2-5, has a command as to how we are to conduct ourselves, state them.
 - A. _____
 - B. _____
 - C. _____
 - D. _____
- 38. What did Jesus promise that He would never do?
- 39. "So we may boldly say, " _____."

Read Hebrews 13:16

- 40. What sacrifices is God well pleased with?

Read 1 Peter 3:8-9

- 41. What can we do to inherit the blessing?
 - A. _____
 - B. _____
 - C. _____
 - D. _____
 - E. _____
 - F. _____
 - G. _____
 - H. _____

Read 1 Peter 3:10-12

- 42. Highlight in your Bible the blessings and instructions in these verses.
- 43. LOOK UP THE SCRIPTURES IN "ADDITIONAL INFORMATION" AND MEDITATE ON THEM.

GOD'S KIND OF LOVE
PART 2
(Discipleship Answer Key)

1. In that Christ laid down His life for us
2. Lay down our lives for one another
3. No
4. In deed and truth
5. A. Your work
B. Your labor of love
6. The saints
7. My brothers and sisters in Christ
8. Love the Lord your God with all your heart,
soul, mind, and strength
9. Love your neighbor as you love yourself
10. Yes
11. Sheep - goats
12. To inherit the Kingdom prepared from the
foundations of the world
13. Food – drink – took Me in – clothed -
visited – came to
14. In as much as you've done it to the least of
My brethren, you've done it to Me.
15. Everlasting fire, prepared for the devil
16. Jesus
17. Hell, everlasting punishment
18. Heaven, the kingdom prepared for them
19. However you want people to treat you, treat
them in like manner
20. Judge
21. Condemn
22. Forgive
23. Be friendly
24. Jesus
25. Deceived
26. Blessed
27. Reap
28. Corruption
29. Everlasting life
30. A. Grow weary
B. Lose heart
31. Do good to all
32. Those in the household of faith
33. The Living God
34. All things to enjoy – to serve others
35. A. Good works
B. Be ready to give
C. Willing to share
36. Laying hold of eternal life

37. A. Entertain strangers
B. Remember the prisoners
C. Keep marriage honorable and the bed undefiled
D. Be content with what you have
38. Leave me nor forsake me
39. The Lord is my helper; I will not fear
what can man do to me
40. To do good and share
41. A. Be of one mind
B. Have compassion
C. Love as brothers
D. Be tenderhearted
E. Be courteous
F. Don't return evil for evil
G. Don't revile
H. Be a blessing

GOD'S KIND OF LOVE II
PART 2
(Additional Information)

Love (to man):

- 1) Is of God. 1 John 4:7
- 2) Commanded by God. 1 John 4:21
- 3) Commanded by Christ. John 13:34, 15:12; 1 John 3:23
- 4) After the example of Christ. John 13:34, 15:12; Ephesians 5:2
- 5) Taught by God. 1 Thessalonians 4:9
- 6) Faith works by. Galatians 5:6
- 7) A fruit of the Spirit. Galatians 5:22; Colossians 1:8
- 8) Purity of the heart leads to. 1 Peter 1:22
- 9) Explained. 1 Corinthians 13:4-7
- 10) Is an active principle. 1 Thessalonians 1:3; Hebrews 6:10
- 11) Is an abiding principle. 1 Corinthians 13:8, 13
- 12) Is the second great commandment. Matthew 22:37-39
- 13) Is the end of the commandment. 1 Timothy 1:5
- 14) Supernatural gifts are nothing without. 1 Corinthians 13:1, 2
- 15) The greatest sacrifices are nothing without. 1 Corinthians 13:3
- 16) Especially enjoined upon ministers. 1 Timothy 4:12; 2 Timothy 2:22
- 17) SAINTS SHOULD
 - 17a) Put on. Colossians 3:14
 - 17b) Follow after. 1 Corinthians 14:1
 - 17c) Abound in. Philippians 1:9; 1 Thessalonians 3:12

- 17d) Continue in. 1 Timothy 2:15; Hebrews 13:1
- 17e) Provoke each other to. 2 Corinthians 8:7, 9:2;
Hebrews 10:24
- 17f) Be sincere in. Romans 12:9; 2 Corinthians
6:6, 8:8; I John 3:18
- 17g) Be disinterested in. 1 Corinthians 10:24, 13:5;
Philippians 2:4
- 17h) Be fervent in. 1 Peter 1:22, 4:8
- 18) Should be connected with brotherly kindness. Romans 12:10; 2 Peter 1:7
- 19) Should be with a pure heart. 1 Peter 1:22
- 20) All things should be done with. 1 Corinthians 16:14
- 21) SHOULD BE EXHIBITED TOWARD
- 21a) Saints. 1 Peter 2:17; 1 John 5:1
- 21b) Ministers. 1 Thessalonians 5:13
- 21c) Our families. Ephesians 5:25; Titus 2:4
- 21d) Fellow-countrymen. Exodus 32:32; Romans 9:2, 3; 10:1
- 21e) Strangers. Leviticus 19:34;
Deuteronomy 10:19
- 21f) Enemies
Exodus 23:4,5; 2 Kings 6:22;
Matthew 5:44; Romans 12:14,
20; 1 Peter 3:9
- 21g) All men. Galatians 6:10
- 22) SHOULD BE EXHIBITED IN
- 22a) Ministering to the wants of others. Matthew 25:35; Hebrews 6:10
- 22b) Loving each other. Galatians 5:13

- 22c) Relieving strangers. Leviticus 25:35;
Matthew 25:36
- 22d) Clothing the naked. Isaiah 58:7; Matthew 25:36
- 22e) Visiting the sick. Job 31:16-22; James 1:27
- 22f) Sympathizing. Romans 12:15;
1 Corinthians 12:26
- 22g) Supporting the weak. Galatians 6:2;
1 Thessalonians 5:14
- 22h) Covering the faults of others. Proverbs 10:12; 1 Peter 4:8
- 22i) Forgiving injuries. Ephesians 4:32;
Colossians 3:13
- 22j) Forbearing. Ephesians 4:2
- 22k) Rebuking. Leviticus 19:17;
Matthew 18:15
- 23) Necessary to true happiness. Proverbs 15:17
- 24) The love of God is a motive to. John 13:34; 1 John 4:11
- 25) AN EVIDENCE OF
- 25a) Being in the light. 1 John 2:10
- 25b) Discipleship with Christ. John 13:35
- 25c) Spiritual life. 1 John 3:14
- 26) Is the fulfilling of the law. Romans 13:8-10; Galatians
5:14; James 2:8
- 27) Love to self is the measure of. Mark 12:33
- 28) Is good and pleasant. Psalms 133:1, 2
- 29) Is a bond of union. Colossians 2:2

- 30) Is the bond of perfectness. Colossians 3:14
- 31) Hypocrites, devoid of. 1 John 2:9, 11, 4:20
- 32) The wicked devoid of. 1 John 3:10
- 33) EXEMPLIFIED
- 33a) Joseph. Genesis 45:15
- 33b) Ruth. Ruth 1:16, 17
- 33c) Jonathan. I Samuel 20:17, 41, 42
- 33d) Obadiah. I Kings 18:4
- 33e) Centurion. Luke 7:5
- 33f) The Church. Acts 2:46; Hebrews 10:33, 34
- 33g) Lydia. Acts 16:15
- 33h) Aquila. Romans 16:3, 4
- 33i) Paul. 2 Corinthians 6:11, 12
- 33j) Epaphroditus. Philippians 2:25, 26, 30
- 33k) Philippians. Philippians 4:15-19
- 33l) Colossians. Colossians 1:4
- 33m) Thessalonians. 1 Thessalonians 3:6
- 33n) Onesiphorus. 2 Timothy 1:16-18
- 33o) Philemon. Philemon 1:7-9
- 33p) Moses. Hebrews 11:25

(Information adapted from The New Topical Text Book)

FINANCES PART 1

Andrew Wommack

Today I want to share with you about financial prosperity and how Jesus wants you to prosper financially. This is something that is important to everyone. It takes money to live, to get your needs met, and to be a blessing to others. God didn't leave us alone in this area and say, "I'm concerned about your spiritual part, but I don't care about your financial part . . . you're on your own." No, He loves you in every way—spirit, soul, and body—and He's made provision for you. It's part of what Jesus died to produce. Most people recognize that some degree of financial prosperity is necessary, but religion basically has taken a stand against having an abundance of finances because they believe that it is actually a self-centered, greedy position.

The Word of God teaches against greed in many different ways but also makes it very clear that financial blessing and prosperity are part of what Jesus died to produce in our lives. In 2 Corinthians 8:9 it says, "For ye know the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, that, though he was rich, yet for your sakes he became poor, that ye through his poverty might be rich." This is talking about financial prosperity, richness in money. Some would like to spiritualize this and say, "No, this is just saying the Lord wants you to prosper emotionally and spiritually," but if you take it in context, all of 2 Corinthians 8 is talking about money. There are statements criticizing greed, and people would definitely agree that's talking about money. Chapter 9 also talks about finances. The whole context is financial and is not just saying Jesus wants you to prosper and be rich in spiritual things, He wants to bless you financially.

Another scripture that goes along with this is 3 John 2, where the Apostle John said, "Beloved, I wish above all things that thou mayest prosper and be in health, even as thy soul prospereth." What a strong statement . . . John says "above all things!" That's certainly not limited to financial prosperity. It's talking about healing, emotions, relationships, and finances. The Lord wants you to prosper and be in health above everything else. He wants you to prosper in spirit, soul, and body. That's His will for you. When it comes to finances, one of the first things you need to recognize is that it's not an optional thing. Jesus died to produce financial blessing in your life just the same as He died to produce forgiveness of sins, physical healing, and deliverance from demonic oppression. The word that's translated "save" or "salvation" over a hundred times in the New Testament is the Greek word "sozo," which literally means "deliverance, healing, financial prosperity, and forgiveness of sins."

We've limited salvation to God forgiving your sins, but Christ died for every aspect of your being, and financial prosperity is part of that. Many religious people actually say that God wants you to be poor, that being poor is a godly thing, and the poorer you are the more godly you are. I was raised under that kind of thinking—that preachers shouldn't have very much—that a Christian is a person who should do without—which this certainly cannot be substantiated by Scripture. Abraham was the richest man of his time, so much so that kings asked him to depart because his possessions were affecting the wealth of their countries. The same was true of Isaac and Jacob. Joseph was a man who prospered and had super abundance. David gave to the Lord out of his own personal treasury over 2.5 billion dollars worth of gold and silver to build the temple. Solomon, David's son, was the richest man that ever lived on the face of the earth. When you look at it scripturally, people who have really served God were blessed financially.

If there isn't a God, and if His Word isn't true when He says, "Give, and it shall be given unto you," taking a portion of what you have and giving it away is the stupidest thing you could ever do. Instead of moving toward the goal of having all your needs met, you're actually moving away from it if God hasn't promised to bless you. It takes faith to be able to give the way God says, and that's the reason He told you to do it. If you say, "Wait until I have some extra and then I'm going to start tithing," in a sense you're saying, "Wait until I can give, and if that money doesn't come back to me, if God's Word doesn't work, I can still make it without it." You're missing the whole point, because you aren't giving in faith. You're saying, "Wait until I can give, so I don't have to have faith and trust God for it to come back." The whole purpose behind God wanting you to give is because He wants you to trust Him.

There are so many scriptures about this. In Luke 16 there is a parable about a steward who cheated his master, and it finally comes down to this: He says if you haven't been faithful in the unrighteous mammon (talking about money), then who will commit to your trust the true riches? If you haven't believed God in the smaller things, concerning money, how are you going to get to the more important things, such as spiritual values? Scriptures like this make money one of the least levels of stewardship. If you can't trust God with your finances, how can you trust Him with your eternal destiny? How can you truly believe Jesus has forgiven your sins and that you're going to spend eternity in heaven? In comparison, the spiritual things we supposedly put our faith in the Lord for are much more significant than money. Money is a minor thing, but it's the bottom line of starting to trust God.

Someone who says, "I can't give, because I have so many bills," is looking at the situation without seeing the spiritual side, without seeing what God can do. When you obey the Lord and begin to give, He gets involved in your finances. God will take the ninety percent you have left, and make it go further than the person's money who tries to use one hundred percent of it. This is illustrated many ways in the Bible. The children of Israel gave one day of every week to the Lord, took that day off, and didn't work. Although the nations around them worked seven days a week, the Israelites began to prosper more than all of them. Then they took one year out of seven when they didn't plant their crops and couldn't reap anything that grew naturally but had to leave it for the poor, other people, and the beasts of the field. You ask, "How could they live how could they survive?" God said He would bless them in the sixth year so they would have three times the normal increase to last through the sixth year, the seventh year when they didn't plant their crops, and the eighth year when they started planting again.

It's the same principle when we begin to trust God with our finances. When you give first, you'll find that the Lord will give back to you. God will never become a debtor to any man. He'll never let you out give Him. As you begin to give, He gives back to you. Proverbs 11:24 basically says, There are some that give away more than it looks like is necessary, and yet they prosper, and there's other that tend to hoard what they have, and it only causes poverty on the inside of them. There are many more examples in Scripture. The widow in 1 Kings 17:11-16 was about to starve to death when the man of God, Elijah, came and said, "Bring me, I pray thee, a morsel of bread in thine hand." She said, "I have not a cake, but an handful of meal in a barrel, and a little oil in a cruse: and, behold, I am gathering two sticks, that I may go in and dress it for me and my son, that we may eat it, and die." Elijah told her to first feed him and then herself and her son, and God said He would take care of them. She did as he told her, and the oil and flour she had lasted for three years because she put God first.

If you seek the kingdom of God and His righteousness first, then He will add these things to you. If you say you want God to help you in your finances—and you're praying for His help but aren't seeking first the kingdom of God, and you aren't taking a step of faith, trusting Him with your finances, and giving—then you really aren't trusting Him. The promises in God's Word are so abundant that when you give, He gives back to you, so it really just comes down to a matter of faith. Do you really believe God? Do you really believe that when you give, God is going to supernaturally undertake for you; or do you see that the money is just gone? The truth is, when you give with the right attitude, the money never leaves your life but goes into your future, where it grows and multiplies.

Actually, when you're in need and what you have in your hand isn't enough to meet the need, what you need to do is turn it into a seed, sow it, and plan for the future. God is pleased when you give with a heart like that, so if you want to experience His prosperity, you need, first of all, to believe it is His will for you to prosper financially. According to 2 Corinthians 8:9, you need to believe that's part of what Jesus died to do just as much as forgiveness of sins. Jesus became poor so we might be made rich. It's the same thing in 2 Corinthians 5:21 when it says Jesus became sin for us so we could be redeemed from sin. The Lord wants you to prosper. If you really believe that, prove it and trust Him by giving. If there isn't a God, and His Word isn't true, then this is crazy. But since there is a God and His Word is true, then giving is your way to prosperity. The way up in God's kingdom is down. The way toward having more in His kingdom is to give not to hoard.

I challenge you today to look up some of these scriptures we've talked about. Think about them and pray about them, and begin to recognize that you can give your way out of poverty. You can trust God. Begin to honor Him with the first fruits of your increase and, as you do, God's prosperity will manifest itself in your life. It is not just for you but so you can be a blessing and abound unto every good work that God has for you.

FINANCES

PART 1

(Outline)

God desires for you to prosper financially.

2 Corinthians 8:9: “For ye know the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, that, though he was rich, yet for your sakes he became poor, that ye through his poverty might be rich.” In context, this verse is talking about finances; it’s not just talking about spiritual things.

3 John 2, “Beloved, I wish above all things that thou mayest prosper and be in health, even as thy soul prospereth.” God’s will is for you to prosper in spirit, soul, and body.

Prospering in finances is not an optional thing. Jesus died to produce financial blessing in your life. “SOZO,” the Greek word for “salvation,” is found over 100 times in the New Testament and literally means “deliverance, healing, financial prosperity, and forgiveness of sins.”

Scripturally, people who have really served God have been blessed financially. Abraham, in the Old Testament, was the richest man in his day.

1 Timothy 6:10: “For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.” Greed is wrong. The “love” of money is the root of all evil. Deuteronomy 8:18: “But thou shalt remember the Lord thy God: for it is he that giveth thee power to get wealth, that he may establish his covenant which he sware unto thy fathers, as it is this day.”

The real purpose of financial prosperity is not to have an abundance of things for our own selfish purposes but so that we can establish God’s covenant here on earth. Genesis 12:2-3: “And I will make of thee a great nation, and I will bless thee, and make thy name great; and thou shalt be a blessing: ³And I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee: and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed.”

2 Corinthians 9:8: “And God is able to make all grace abound toward you; that ye, always having all sufficiency in all things, may abound to every good work.” The definition of true biblical prosperity is having enough to meet our own needs with enough left to be a blessing to others.

Matthew 6:33: “But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you.” Give to God first with your finances, and He will supply all the other things that you need, and you’ll be a blessing to other people. God wants you to prosper, but it is dependent on your motive and actions.

FINANCES
PART 1
(Teacher's Guide)

1. A. According to Deuteronomy 8:18, who gives us power to get wealth?
 God.
- B. For what purpose does He give us the power to get wealth?
 To further His kingdom.
2. What is a good definition of prosperity?
 To have enough of God's supply to accomplish God's instructions.
3. A. What is idolatry according to Colossians 3:5?
 Covetousness.
- B. What is the root of all evil? (1 Timothy 6:10)
 The LOVE of money.
4. Explain the principle of giving from 2 Corinthians 9:6-7.
 If you sow sparingly, you will reap sparingly. Give as you purpose in your heart and do it cheerfully.
5. What are "all these things" mentioned in Matthew 6:33?
 Material blessings—the things we need in life.
6. What is the greatest treasure that we can have according to Hebrews 13:5?
 Jesus Christ.
7. Explain in your own words what Mark 10:29-30 is saying.
 There are rewards for following Jesus in this life as well as in the eternal life to come.

FINANCES

PART 1

(Detailed Teacher's Guide)

Note: The following information may be read out loud (a numbered section at a time) with the person(s) being disciplined. After each numbered section is read, pause and ask the question(s) that correspond to the paragraph(s), and then discuss them.

¹ Deuteronomy 8:18 says, "thou shalt remember the LORD thy God: for [it is] he that giveth thee power to get wealth, that he may establish his covenant which he sware unto thy fathers, as [it is] this day." God gives us the power to prosper financially so that we can use that prosperity to further His kingdom here on the earth.

A good Bible definition of prosperity is found in 2 Corinthians 9:8, which says, "And God [is] able to make all grace abound toward you; that ye, always having all sufficiency in all [things], may abound to every good work." Prosperity is having enough of God's supply to accomplish God's instructions. Those who feel they couldn't use any more money only have a selfish vision. Their needs may be met, but what about a lost and dying world? Those with an unselfish vision are believing for more prosperity so that they can give to every good work. It takes money to preach the Gospel. For the Gospel to prosper, we have to prosper. The money comes to us first so that we can, in turn, fund the ministry.

² The Bible teaches against greed and covetousness, which is called idolatry (Colossians 3:5). Some have used this to say that having large amounts of money is evil. But having money isn't evil; it is the LOVE of money that is the root of all evil (1 Timothy 6:10). It is possible to have money without it having you. And you don't have to be rich to commit this sin of loving money. In fact, some of the people who lust for wealth the most are the ones who are poor. They think if they had more money and what it could buy, they would be happy. The rich know that isn't true.

³ So, it's greed that rots the seed. If our motive for prosperity is not so we can consume the money on ourselves, then the Lord will give us an abundance of finances so we can sow them into His kingdom. If He can get the money through you, He will get it to you. Paul said God gives seed to the sowers (2 Corinthians 9:10). This was talking of money. He was saying, "If you will be faithful to give, God will supply you with the money to do it." Therefore, if we are short on seed, it's probably because we are not very good sowers. Sowers have seed. That's God's promise.

¹ (a) According to Deuteronomy 8:18, who gives us power to get wealth?

(b) For what purpose? To further His kingdom.

(c) What is a good definition of prosperity?

² (a) What is idolatry according to Colossians 3:5?

(b) What is the root of all evil? (1 Timothy 6:10)

³ Explain the principle of giving from 2 Corinthians 9:6-7.

⁴ In Matthew 6:33 Jesus said, “But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you.” What things was Jesus talking about? We don’t have to wonder. The answer is right there in the context. Jesus was speaking of our physical needs being met if we would seek first the kingdom of God.

He wasn’t speaking of seeking first the kingdom of God through prayer or a Bible study. He was saying that if our reason for desiring prosperity was so we could advance the kingdom of God, then the Lord would see to it that all our temporal needs were met. That’s what the context of this verse teaches.

The Lord established a system that enables us to devote our whole heart to Him and His kingdom. We don’t have to departmentalize our lives into the secular and religious. We can make our whole purpose in life to glorify God. In the financial realm, we can make our real heart’s cry, “I want more so that I can give more.” When a person seeks first the kingdom of God in that way, then the Lord personally sees to his needs being met. We don’t have to be concerned with our own needs. And the Lord will take care of us better than we would have taken care of ourselves.

⁵ Someone may be saying, “What about Hebrews 13:5? It says, ‘[Let your] conversation [be] without covetousness; [and be] content with such things as ye have: for he hath said, I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee.’” Doesn’t this verse teach that we are suppose to have nothing? No! This verse is teaching against covetousness. We should be content with what we have, but as we start living to give, abundance will come our way, and we should be content with that too.

Jesus said in Mark 10:29-30 that any person who gives to Him out of the right motive would receive a hundredfold return IN THIS LIFE. That’s a promise. We don’t give to get; but we realize as we give we will get so we can give even more. And as the money flows through, there will always be plenty for you. The Lord will meet your needs. He is El Shaddai, the All Sufficient One, not El Cheapo, the Stingy One.

⁴What are “all these things” mentioned in Matthew 6:33?

⁵(a)What is the greatest treasure that we can have according to Hebrews 13:5? Jesus Christ.

(b)Explain in your own words what Mark 10:29-30 is saying?

FINANCES
PART 1
(Discipleship Questions)

Prosperity: to flourish, thrive, good fortune, success
Prosperous: continued good fortune, well to do, well off, favorable
Prosper: to push forward, go over, to break out, and to advance

Read 3 John 2

1. What is it that we are to prosper in?
2. What else are we encouraged to prosper in besides finances?
3. Can you see that there is a distinction here between financial prosperity and physical prosperity?

Read Genesis 39:2-3

4. What was the result of the Lord being with Joseph?

Read Joshua 1:5-9

5. What does the Lord promise to you in verse 5?
6. If the Lord was with Joseph and he prospered, and the Lord promises to never leave you nor forsake you, do you believe that He will also prosper you?
7. In verse 6 we are promised an inheritance, in order to receive it, what does verse 7 say we must do?
8. If we do not turn from it, the commands of the Lord, what will happen to us wherever we go?
9. What is the result if we meditate on the Scriptures and do as it commands?
10. What does the Lord re-emphasize in verse 9?
11. Do you believe Him yet?

Read Deuteronomy 28:1-14

12. What "shall come to pass if you diligently obey the voice of the Lord your God and observe carefully all His commands"?
13. How many of the blessings shall come upon you and overtake you because of your obedience?

Verses 3-14 explain all the blessings the Lord wants to bless you with. In your Bible, underline or highlight all the blessings that are for you right now, today. Do not skip any because you think you are not worthy. Every blessing is for you if you walk with the Lord.

IF YOU ARE NOT WALKING WITH THE LORD, READ VERSES 15-68. WHEN YOU ARE DONE, GET RIGHT WITH GOD!!!

Read Deuteronomy 8:18

14. Who is it that has the power to give you wealth?

Read 2 Corinthians 9:6-15

15. If you sow sparingly, what will you reap?
16. If you sow bountifully, what will you reap?
17. How are we to give?
18. What does God love?
19. When God makes His grace abound toward us, what does He give us all sufficiency in?
- A. ALL things
 - B. Some things
 - C. Random things
20. Who supplies the seed and the bread?
21. Who is going to supply and multiply the things you need in order for you to be a cheerful giver?
22. The administration of this service not only gives glory to God, it also supplies the needs of whom?
_____ Who is the saint?
23. When you are liberal in your giving, God gets the glory because of your _____.

Read Matthew 6: 19-21

24. Where are we to lay up our treasures?
25. Write in your own words what verse 21 means.

Read Matthew 6:24

26. Why can't you serve both God and mammon (money)?

Read Matthew 6:25-34

27. What are you not to worry about?
28. What must you do in order for "all these things to be added unto you"?

Read Exodus 20: 3,17

29. What does this commandment say (verse 3)?
30. What does this commandment say (verse 17)?

COVET: to desire or to lust after

Read Colossians 3:5

31. What does the Word say that covetousness is?

Read 1 Timothy 6:6-10

32. "Godliness [mixed with] _____ is great gain."
33. Can we take anything with us when we leave this earth?
34. What are we to be content with?
35. What happens when you fall into the temptation of riches?
36. What is the love of money the root of?
37. Does it say that money itself is the root of all evil or just the love of it?

Read Hebrews 13:5

38. What is our conduct to be without?
39. What are we to be content with?

Read Matthew 22:37

40. What is to be our first love in our life?
41. If God is first, where does that put the love of money?

Read Psalm 37:1-11

42. What must you do in order to receive the desires of your heart?
- | | | |
|----|-------|----|
| A. | _____ | v3 |
| B. | _____ | v3 |
| C. | _____ | v3 |
| D. | _____ | v3 |
| E. | _____ | v4 |
| F. | _____ | v5 |
| G. | _____ | v5 |
| H. | _____ | v7 |
| I. | _____ | v7 |
| J. | _____ | v7 |
| K. | _____ | v8 |
| L. | _____ | v8 |

43. What shall you inherit if you “wait on the Lord”? (V9)

44. What shall the meek inherit?

45. What will we delight ourselves in?

MEEK: gentle, mild, an inwrought grace of the soul, disposition are first and chiefly towards God. Temper of the spirit in which we accept His dealings with us as good, and therefore do not dispute or resist. Humble heart, one who does not fight against God. Self-control. Strength under control.

FINANCES
PART 1
(Discipleship Answer Key)

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. All things | 20. God |
| 2. Our health | 21. God |
| 3. Yes | 22. The saints – fellow believers |
| 4. He was a successful man, the Lord made all he did to prosper | 23. Obedience |
| 5. The Lord will be with me | 24. In heaven |
| 6. Yes | 25. My treasure is the Lord |
| 7. Be strong and courageous, observe all the Lord has commanded | 26. Because you will hate the one and love the other |
| 8. We will prosper | 27. My basic needs |
| 9. Our way will be prosperous and we'll have good success | 28. Seek first the Kingdom of God |
| 10. Be strong and courageous, don't be dismayed or frightened | 29. You shall have no other god's before Me |
| 11. Yes | 30. You shall not covet neighbor's goods or wife |
| 12. Set us high above all the nations on earth | 31. Idolatry |
| 13. All the blessings | 32. Contentment |
| 14. God | 33. No |
| 15. Sparingly | 34. Having food and clothing |
| 16. Bountifully | 35. You are ensnared into foolish and harmful lusts which leads to destruction and perdition |
| 17. As he purposes in his heart | 36. All kinds of evils |
| 18. A cheerful giver | 37. Love of it |
| 19. A. All things | 38. Covetousness |
| | 39. With such things as you have |

40. The Lord thy God
41. Money is not to be loved
42. A. Trust in the Lord
B. Do good
C. Dwell in the land d. feed on His faithful.
E. Delight yourself in the Lord
F. Commit your ways to Him
G. Trust in Him
H. Rest in Him
I. Wait patiently
J. Don't fret
K. Cease from anger
L. Forsake wrath
43. The earth
44. The earth
45. The abundance of peace
- 46.

FINANCES PART 1 (Additional Information)

2 Corinthians 9:8: “And God is able to make all grace abound toward you; that ye, always having all sufficiency in all things, may abound to every good work.”

Most people go through stages of giving similar to stages of growth in training their children. First there is the obedience stage where we train our children to do the right thing just because we told them to do it. They don't have the capacity to understand completely, but they need to establish positive patterns even before their reasoning is mature. Likewise, when we first come to the Lord we need to establish this foundation of obedience.

Next, a child begins to imitate his parents' actions. This would be similar to being led by the Holy Spirit in our giving. The Holy Spirit becomes our guide, and He wants us to emulate Him. There is great benefit to ourselves as well as to others from being led by the Holy Spirit in our giving. Yet, there is still another level of giving to which Paul is referring to here.

The ultimate motivation for giving is to give as we purpose in our hearts, as Paul is describing here. This is comparable to a son who is serving not just out of obedience because he fears punishment or because he is motivated by the example of his parent but because his heart has been affected to the point that it is his desire to do what is right. That is what every parent longs for, and that is what the Lord desires in our giving.

If the only time we give is when the Lord tells us to, that is comparable to a child who only says he loves his father when he is told to do so. Although there is a time when that is proper, it is not the ultimate. There needs to be those times when the child says he loves his father just because that is what is in his heart.

It is true that God will tell us to give specific amounts of money at times to help meet the need of someone else or for our own personal benefit. However, it is also appropriate to give just because we want to. Those who only know how to respond to commands or specific leadings of the Holy Spirit in their giving will miss bringing joy to the Lord through their unsolicited, cheerful giving.

(2 Corinthians 9:8) Notice what this verse did not say. It did not say, “God will make all grace abound toward you.” This verse is stating that God is willing and able to supply every need of the cheerful giver, but that doesn't happen automatically. There are conditions to be met. Galatians 6:9 says, “And let us not be weary in well doing: for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not.”

(2 Corinthians 9:8) This verse completely dispels the notion that God only wants to supply our bare necessities. He is able to make all grace (in this instance, His miraculous intervention) abound toward us. The word “abound” means: (1) to be plentiful in number or amount, (2) to be fully supplied. Whatever our situation, God's grace abounds greater (Romans 5:20). The Lord desires that we ALWAYS have ALL sufficiency in ALL things. It is not God's will for us to suffer financially.

(2 Corinthians 9:8) Those who argue against prosperity invariably cite the examples of those who have gathered riches to consume upon their own lusts. They use these negative examples to make the point that those who are rich are selfish and corrupt, and then argue against prosperity on the grounds of greed. However, that is not the purpose of God giving us wealth (Deuteronomy 8:18). As this verse states, it is so we may help others. The purpose of God's prosperity in our lives is so that we can be the blessing to others that we need to be. Before we can be a blessing, we have to be blessed (Genesis 12:2). If we are not selfish with our riches, then wealth can be a wonderful thing.

2 Corinthians 9:8 is describing an abundance of blessing to the point that we can abound to every good work. That means that we should never be unable to give to any good cause. Sad to say, that is not the case with most Christians. Satan has robbed us through "poverty thinking" and has caused many good works to go under-funded. If you are so blessed that you don't have any more needs, then think about others, and believe for more abundance so that you can be a blessing to them.

FINANCES PART 2

Andrew Wommack

Today I want to share more about finances with you. In the last session I explained that it is God's will for you to prosper financially. Now I want to give you some keys about how that works. There's so much material that I am having to compress it, so I pray you will study and get a lot more from it. Luke 6:38 says, "Give, and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For with the same measure that ye mete withal it shall it be measured to you again." There are many principles involved, but you can't talk about financial prosperity without talking about giving. Giving is what releases God's abundance into your life. You must give.

In the Old Testament the tithe was the standard, and then there were offerings in addition. Malachi 3:10 says, "Bring ye all the tithes into the storehouse, that there be meat in mine house, and prove me now herewith, saith the Lord of hosts, if I will not open you the windows of heaven, and pour you out a blessing, that there shall not be room enough to receive it." There are many scriptures about giving, yet when you talk about financial prosperity a lot of people say, "All right, so God wants to prosper me, but I don't have it to give." There are a number of things you need to learn. As the Lord talked about prosperity, He said, "First of all, you give ten percent." He didn't put a dollar amount on it, but a percentage. This means that any person can give; you have something to give. If all you have is a dime, then a penny is a tithe, and God sees that as just as great a gift as the person who gives a thousand dollar tithe from ten thousand dollars. He doesn't look at the dollar amount but rather at the percentage.

You can see this in the Bible where Jesus talked about the widow who put her last two mites into the offering. He had been watching the rich people put in huge sums of money, yet He called His disciples together and said this woman gave more than them all, because they gave out of their abundance, but she gave out of her poverty. God does not evaluate the size of your gift by its monetary value but rather by the percentage of what you had to give. When a person says, "I don't have anything to give," it's not true. If nothing else, you could take a piece of clothing you have and give it away. Everyone has something to give, so do away with this argument that you don't have anything to give. As a matter of fact, the time you seem to have little of anything is when your giving can be a greater percentage than any other time. A person who has ten dollars and gives away five has given a much larger gift than someone who gives a million dollars when they have billions and billions left. God set it up so every single person can give, can operate in this.

Another argument I often hear is, "Well, I want to give, but I just don't have it right now. I'll give as soon as I get some extra money." In that case, you're missing the real purpose behind giving. Why did God tell us to give? Why didn't He set it up some other way so money just comes to us and we don't have to give? There are many things involved, but one of the main purposes is that God wants you to trust Him in every area of your life. He doesn't want you to compartmentalize your relationship with Him into a Sunday part when you give Him everything, and a weekday part when you spend forty to sixty hours making money totally on your own and He's not involved. God wants to be involved in everything you do,

so how does He get you to trust Him? It's very simple . . . He says, "Give me ten percent of everything you have."

If there isn't a God, and if His Word isn't true when He says, "Give, and it shall be given unto you," taking a portion of what you have and giving it away is the stupidest thing you could ever do. Instead of moving toward the goal of having all your needs met, you're actually moving away from it if God hasn't promised to bless you. It takes faith to be able to give the way God says, and that's the reason He told you to do it. If you say, "Wait until I have some extra and then I'm going to start tithing," in a sense you're saying, "Wait until I can give, and if that money doesn't come back to me, if God's Word doesn't work, I can still make it without it." You're missing the whole point because you aren't giving in faith. You're saying, "Wait until I can give, so I don't have to have faith and trust God for it to come back." The whole purpose behind God wanting you to give is because He wants you to trust Him.

There are so many scriptures about this. In Luke 16 there is a parable about a steward who cheated his master, and it finally comes down to this: He says if you haven't been faithful in the unrighteous mammon (talking about money), then who will commit to your trust the true riches? If you haven't believed God in the smaller things, concerning money, how are you going to get to the more important things, such as spiritual values? Scriptures like this make money one of the least levels of stewardship. If you can't trust God with your finances, how can you trust Him with your eternal destiny? How can you truly believe Jesus has forgiven your sins and that you're going to spend eternity in heaven? In comparison, the spiritual things we supposedly put our faith in the Lord for are much more significant than money. Money is a minor thing, but it's the bottom line of starting to trust God.

Someone who says, "I can't give, because I have so many bills," is looking at the situation without seeing the spiritual side, without seeing what God can do. When you obey the Lord and begin to give, He gets involved in your finances. God will take the ninety percent you have left and make it go further than the person's money who tries to use 100 percent of it. This is illustrated many ways in the Bible. The children of Israel gave one day of every week to the Lord, took that day off and didn't work. Although the nations around them worked seven days a week, the Israelites began to prosper more than all of them. Then they took one year out of seven when they didn't plant their crops and couldn't reap anything that grew naturally. They left it for the poor, other people, and the beasts of the field. You ask, "How could they live; how could they survive?" God said He would bless them in the sixth year so they would have three times the normal increase to last through the sixth year, the seventh year when they didn't plant their crops, and the eighth year when they started planting again.

It's the same principle when we begin to trust God with our finances. When you give first, you'll find that the Lord will give back to you. God will never become a debtor to any man. He'll never let you out give Him. As you begin to give, He gives back to you. Proverbs 11:24 says, there are some that give away more than it looks like is necessary, and yet they prosper, and there are others that tend to hoard what they have, and it only causes poverty on the inside of them. There are many more examples in Scripture. The widow in 1 Kings 17:11-16 was about to starve to death when the man of God, Elijah, came and said, "Bring me, I pray thee, a morsel of bread in thine hand." She said, "I have not a cake, but an handful of meal in a barrel, and a little oil in a cruse; and, behold, I am gathering two sticks, that I may go in and dress it for me and my son, that we may eat it, and die." Elijah told her to first feed him and then herself and her son, and God said He would take care of them. She did as he told her, and the oil and flour she had lasted for three years because she put God first.

If you seek the kingdom of God and His righteousness first, then He will add these things to you. If you say you want God to help you in your finances—and you're praying for His help but aren't seeking first the kingdom of God, and you aren't taking a step of faith, trusting Him with your finances, and giving—then you really aren't trusting Him. The promises in God's Word are so abundant that when you give, He gives back to you, so it really just comes down to a matter of faith. Do you really believe God? Do you really believe that when you give, God is going to supernaturally undertake for you; or do you see that the money is just gone? The truth is, when you give with the right attitude, the money never leaves your life but goes into your future, where it grows and multiplies.

Actually, when you're in need and what you have in your hand isn't enough to meet the need, what you need to do is turn it into a seed, sow it, and plan for the future. God is pleased when you give with a heart like that, so if you want to experience His prosperity, you need, first of all, to believe it is His will for you to prosper financially. According to 2 Corinthians 8:9, you need to believe that's part of what Jesus died to do just as much as forgiveness of sins. Jesus became poor so we might be made rich. It's the same thing in 2 Corinthians 5:21 when it says Jesus became sin for us so we could be redeemed from sin. The Lord wants you to prosper. If you really believe that, prove it and trust Him by giving. If there isn't a God, and His Word isn't true, then this is crazy. But since there is a God and His Word is true, then giving is your way to prosperity. The way up in God's kingdom is down. The way toward having more in His kingdom is to give not to hoard.

I challenge you today to look up some of these scriptures we've talked about. Think about them and pray about them, and begin to recognize that you can give your way out of poverty. You can trust God. Begin to honor Him with the first fruits of your increase and, as you do, God's prosperity will manifest itself in your life. It is not just for you but so you can be a blessing and abound unto every good work that God has for you.

FINANCES

PART 2

(Outline)

Luke 6:38: “Give, and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give into your bosom. For with the same measure that ye mete withal it shall be measured to you again.” Giving is what releases God’s abundance in your life. When you start giving financially, God gets involved in your finances.

Proverbs 11:24: “There is that scattereth, and yet increaseth; and there is that withholdeth more than is meet, but it tendeth to poverty.” As you begin to give, God gives back to you.

Malachi 3:10: “Bring ye all the tithes into the storehouse, that there may be meat in mine house, and prove me now herewith, saith the LORD of hosts, if I will not open you the windows of heaven, and pour you out a blessing, that there shall not be room enough to receive it.” God doesn’t look at the dollar amount of your giving but rather the percentage. Therefore, every person has something to give.

Luke 16:11: “If therefore ye have not been faithful in the unrighteous mammon, who will commit to your trust the true riches?” God wants you to trust Him in every area of your life. One of the main reasons He has set up the principle of giving is that He wants to get you to trust Him. It takes faith to believe God’s promise that when you give, He will bless you. If you can’t trust God with your finances, how can you trust Him with your eternal destiny?

1 Kings 17:13-15: “And Elijah said unto her, Fear not; go and do as thou hast said: but make me thereof a little cake first, and bring it unto me, and after make for thee and for thy son. ¹⁴For thus saith the LORD God of Israel, The barrel of meal shall not waste, neither shall the cruse of oil fail, until the day that the LORD sendeth rain upon the earth. ¹⁵And she went and did according to the saying of Elijah: and she, and he, and her house, did eat many days.”

When you put God first, taking a step in giving, He’ll take care of your needs. When you give with the right attitude, that money never leaves your life, but enters your future, where it grows and multiplies.

When you honor God with the first fruits of your increase, God’s prosperity will manifest in your life, not just for you, but so that you can be a blessing. Believe it’s God’s will for you to prosper, and trust God by giving.

FINANCES
PART 2
(Teacher's Guide)

1. A. God's motivation for giving to us is what? (John 3:16)

His love.

- B. According to 1 Corinthians 13:3, the motivation behind our giving must be what?

Love—seeking the welfare and benefit of others regardless of how we feel (Matthew 7:12).

2. Explain the meaning of James 2:15-16.

Ninety-five percent of all love is nonverbal. It's not in what we say but in the things that we do.

3. A. Is it wrong for us to expect to receive when we give?

Not according to the words of Jesus (Luke 6:38).

- B. What is Luke 6:38 saying to you?

4. A. According to Ephesians 1:7, did God give out of His riches or according to His riches? (Explain the difference)

God gave according to His riches—the best He could give to redeem us.

- B. How should we give unto God?

We should hold back nothing (Acts 2:44-45).

FINANCES
PART 2
(Detailed Teacher's Guide)

Note: The following information may be read out loud (a numbered section at a time) with the person(s) being discipled. After each numbered section is read, pause and ask the question(s) that correspond to the paragraph(s), and then discuss them.

¹ “God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life” (John 3:16. This very familiar passage of Scripture summarizes God's love for us and also gives us some great insight into giving.

The first thing that we should consider is that God loved us so much that He gave. The motive behind God's greatest gift was love. The proper foundation for any gift must be this godly kind of love. The Lord didn't just pity us; He didn't just feel obligated to us as our Creator; He didn't give Jesus out of guilt or desperation or any other motivation; He loved us with all of His heart, and that is what moved Him to action.

Likewise, the motivation behind our giving must be love for God. Much of the time, people are motivated out of pity, guilt, or debt, but that's not right. Paul said in 1 Corinthians 13:3, “And though I bestow all my goods to feed [the poor], and though I give my body to be burned, and have not charity, it profiteth me nothing.” The motivation behind our gift is more important to God than the gift. Pure love for God must be the foundation of all giving that pleases God. Absence of love as the motivating force behind our giving causes us to profit nothing from our gifts.

² Second, giving is something God did. It is an action. It wouldn't have profited us anything if the Lord felt love for us but did nothing about it. God's love compelled Him to act. True love for God and love for others will make us act too. Those who say they love God and yet don't give, are deceiving themselves. Faith without works is dead, and love without action is dead too. How does it profit someone if we tell them to be clothed and fed and yet don't give to meet those needs (James 2:15-16)? Our good intentions are not a substitute for giving. The notion that “God knows my heart, and He knows I want to give” is meaningless. That doesn't minister to God any more than it ministers to the needy when someone just wishes them the best. There must be action.

¹ (a) God's motivation for giving to us was what? (John 3:16)

(b) According to 1 Corinthians 13:3, the motivation behind our giving must be what?

² Explain the meaning of James 2:15-16.

³Third, why did God give? He gave because He was motivated out of love for us not love for Himself. But does that mean He didn't expect to receive anything in return for His giving? No! Titus 2:14 says, "Who gave himself for us, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, and purify unto himself a peculiar people, zealous of good works." The Lord had two purposes in His giving. He wanted to set us free, and He wanted us to come into relationship with Him.

Many people have missed the real point of John 3:16. They believed that Jesus' only purpose for coming to this earth and dying for us was to forgive our sins and keep us from perishing. But that's not it. God's primary purpose was to bring us into relationship with Himself, and it just so happened that sin was a barrier that blocked that relationship. So Jesus did die for our sins, but He had a greater goal than just keeping us out of hell. He wanted something in return. He wanted us, our love and fellowship. He gave expecting to receive.

Therefore, it is not wrong for us to expect to receive when we give. It should not be the primary motive, but it would not be like God to expect nothing in return. A farmer expects to reap what he sows, and believers should expect to receive increase from the seeds of giving that they sow.

Our Lord used the expected return on His giving as a motivation that allowed Him to look beyond the sacrifice of the cross to the prize that would be won (Hebrews 12:2). We need to recognize that when we give, that money doesn't leave our lives but it enters into our future, where it grows and multiplies. There is a reward coming for our giving. Knowing this will make us the cheerful givers that God loves (2 Corinthians 9:7).

⁴Fourth, how much did God the Father give? He gave His very best. He gave all that He had. He didn't play it safe in His giving. He gave to such a degree that if what He was believing for did not come to pass, He would have been devastated.

In the same way, we need to give sacrificially enough that it puts us at risk. Those who only give what they can afford aren't using any faith. We need to give with wisdom; but we need to give to the degree that if God doesn't come through, we are in trouble. Godly giving is a step of faith. Anyone who says, "I want to give but I can't" is missing the fact that godly giving takes faith.

God gave us His ONLY begotten Son; He didn't have anyone else in reserve. The world was unworthy of His gift, and yet He gave because of His great love. If God gave so much for us, how can we possibly give less than our best?

³(a) Why did God give Jesus according to Titus 2:14?

(b) Is it wrong for us to expect to receive when we give?

⁴(a) According to Ephesians 1:7, did God give out of His riches or according to His riches? Explain the difference.

(b) How should we give unto God?

⁵ Fifth, whom did God love? He loved the whole world. He didn't give His Son just for those He knew would accept Him. Jesus died for the sins of everyone, even those Who rejected Him (1 John 2:1-2). God was aggressive in His giving. We need to be aggressive in our giving, knowing that there are still millions of people who have not heard the "good news," and there are millions of others who may have heard, but the message has been muted by religion. We have to be aggressive in our presentation of the Gospel, and it takes money to do that (Romans 10:15).

Therefore, if we want to be godly in our giving, we must learn to give like God. Giving the Lord a pittance is like giving a small tip when it is within our power to pay the full price. That is not sufficient, and it is actually an insult.

If we truly appreciate what He has done for us, there will be no grief as we give back to Him. Sharing our finances for the advancement of the Gospel is the least we can do.

"Thanks be unto God for his unspeakable gift" (2 Corinthians 9:15).

⁵(a) What are some ways we should give unto God?
(b) What is Luke 6:38 saying to you?

FINANCES
PART 2
(Discipleship Questions)

Read John 3:16

1. How did God feel about the world?
2. Because of His love what did He give?
3. Did God give His best or just a half-hearted offering?
4. Through His gift of Jesus, what shall we inherit if we believe in Him?

Read 1 Corinthians 6:19-20

5. What is your body now considered?
6. Who do we receive the Holy Spirit from?
7. Are we now our own?
8. What price was it that we were bought for?
9. Therefore, how should we now glorify God?
 - A. _____
 - B. _____

Read 1 Peter 1:18-19

10. Did corruptible things like silver and gold redeem you?
11. Did the traditions of your father's save you?
12. What were you redeemed by?

Read Revelations 1:5-6

13. List the three things Jesus is in verse 5.
 - A. _____
 - B. _____
 - C. _____
14. How did Jesus feel about us?
15. Because He loved us, what did He do?

- 16. What did He use to wash us with?
- 17. Now that we are washed and sanctified, what has His sacrifice (gift) made us?

Read 1 Corinthians 13:3

- 18. What must be the driving force behind our giving?
- 19. If we give out of obligation, what will it profit us?

Read James 2:14-18

- 20. Is there profit in having faith without works?
- 21. Is there profit in empty words for someone who has a real need?
- 22. If you have faith without works, what is it considered?
- 23. How is it we show our faith?

Read Luke 6:38

- 24. According to this verse, is it wrong for us to think that we should receive anything if we give?
- 25. If we give, how will it be given back to us?
 - A. _____
 - B. _____
 - C. _____
 - D. _____

- 26. By what measure will it be measured back to us?
- 27. If we are stingy in our giving, what can we expect to receive?

Read Proverbs 11:24-25

- 28. What is the result of the one who “scatters more”?
- 29. What happens if you withhold more than is right?
- 30. What happens for the generous soul?
- 31. Will the one who waters go without?

Read Proverbs 28:27

- 32. Will you lack in anything if you give to the poor?
- 33. What is the result if you “hide your eyes” from those who need help?

Read Isaiah 58:10-11

- 34. If you help the hungry and afflicted, what will we receive in return?
 - A. _____
 - B. _____
 - C. _____
 - D. _____
 - E. _____
 - F. _____
 - G. _____

Read Luke 14:13-14

- 35. Who should we invite to the feast?
- 36. Why will we be blessed?
- 37. When shall we be repaid?

BOUNTIFULLY: liberally, abundantly, with fatness, that blessings may accrue.

Read 2 Corinthians 9:6-8

- 38. How will you reap if you sow sparingly?
- 39. How will you reap if you sow bountifully?
- 40. How are we to give (verse 7)?
- 41. What kind of giver does God love?
- 42. What does God make abound toward those who are cheerful givers?
- 43. What will He give us sufficiency in?
 - A. Some things
 - B. All things
 - C. Only what He feels like that day
- 44. Why would God make us sufficient in All things?

Read Luke 21:1-4

45. How did the rich give to God?
46. How did the poor woman give?
47. According to Jesus, who gave more?

Read 2 Corinthians 8:1-5

48. Even though the church of Macedonia was experiencing great trial and deep poverty, how did they give? (V2)
49. According to their _____ did they freely give. (V3)
50. Who did they give themselves to first? (V5)
51. Then by Whose will did they give to the saints? (V5)

Read Ephesians 1:7

52. Did God give to us OUT of His riches or ACCORDING TO His riches? (Circle one)
53. Explain what the difference is between giving out of your riches or according to your riches.
54. Is God concerned with amounts or percentages?

Read 2 Corinthians 8:12-14

55. If we have a willing mind, how is our gift accepted?
56. Are we to give and go without so that others can live on easy street?
57. How is there equality in giving according to verse 14?

Read Matthew 5:42

58. What does Christ command us to do in this verse?

Read Acts 20:35

59. What did Jesus say was more blessed to do?

Read Galatians 6:6-10

60. What must we do if we are taught the Word?

61. How is it that we cannot fool God? “For whatever a man _____ that he will also _____.”
62. Why are we not to grow weary in doing good?
63. When we have the opportunity, what are we to do?
64. Especially toward whom?

Read 1 Timothy 6:17-18

65. What are the rich in this present age not to do?
66. Who are they to trust instead?
67. How does God give?
68. How are the rich to respond according to verse 18?

Read Malachi 3:10

69. What will God do for us when we bring our tithes into the storehouse?

FINANCES
PART 2
(Discipleship Answer Key)

- | | |
|--|--|
| 1. He loved the world | 20. Nothing |
| 2. His Son | 21. No |
| 3. His best | 22. Dead |
| 4. Eternal life | 23. By my works |
| 5. A temple of the Holy Spirit | 24. No |
| 6. God | 25. A. Good measure
B. Pressed down
C. Shaken together
D. Running over |
| 7. No | |
| 8. Jesus' blood | 26. The same measure I use |
| 9. A. In body
B. In spirit | 27. Stinginess |
| 10. No | 28. Increases more |
| 11. No | 29. Leads to poverty |
| 12. Precious Blood of Christ | 30. Will be made rich |
| 13. A. Faithful witness
B. First born from the dead
C. Ruler over kings of the earth | 31. No, he will be watered also
32. No |
| 14. He loved us | 33. Many curses |
| 15. Washed us of our sin | 34. A. Light shall dawn in the darkness
B. Darkness shall be as noon day
C. Lord will guide continually
D. Satisfy my soul in drought
E. Lord will strengthen my bones
F. I will be like a watered garden'
G. Like a spring whose water doesn't fail |
| 16. His own blood | |
| 17. Kings and Priests | |
| 18. Love | |
| 19. Nothing | 35. The poor, lame, maimed and blind |

36. Because they cannot repay
37. At the resurrection of the just
38. Sparingly
39. Bountifully
40. As one purposes in his heart
41. A cheerful one
42. Grace
43. B. All things
44. So that we would have an abundance in every good work
45. Out of their abundance
46. Out of her poverty
47. The widow
48. Abundance of joy and liberally
49. Ability
50. To the Lord
51. God's will
52. According to
53. Giving out = skimming off the top
According to = all inclusive giving
54. No
55. According to what we have
56. NO
57. No, my abundance may supply someone else's lack, and theirs, mine
58. Give to those who ask
59. Give than receive
60. Share in all good things
61. Sows - reap
62. In due season we shall reap
63. Do good to all
64. The saints
65. Be haughty or trust in uncertain riches
66. Living God
67. Richly
68. Ready to give, willing to share
69. Open the windows of heaven and pour out a blessing

FINANCES
PART 2
(Additional Information)

TRUE PROSPERITY IS NOT SELFISH OR GREEDY

The proper motivation for prosperity is so that we can be a blessing to others. Those who resist prosperity are the ones who are selfish. Those who say, "I have enough, I would never ask God for anything more," are only thinking of themselves. That is not what prosperity is all about. Deuteronomy 8:18 says, "But thou shalt remember the LORD thy God: for [it is] he that giveth thee power to get wealth, that he may establish his covenant which he sware unto thy fathers, as [it is] this day." God gives us the power to prosper financially so that we can use that prosperity to further His kingdom here on earth.

A good biblical definition of prosperity is found in 2 Corinthians 9:8, which says, "And God [is] able to make all grace abound toward you; that ye, always having all sufficiency in all [things], may abound to every good work." Prosperity is having enough of God's supply to accomplish God's instructions. Those who feel they couldn't use any more money only have a selfish vision. Their needs may be met, but what about a lost and dying world? Those with an unselfish vision are believing for more prosperity so that they can give to every good work. It takes money to preach the Gospel. For the Gospel to prosper, we have to prosper. The money comes to us first so that we can, in turn, fund the ministry.

The Bible teaches against greed and covetousness, which is called idolatry (Colossians 3:5). Some have used this to say that having large amounts of money is evil. But having money isn't evil; it is the LOVE of money that is the root of all evil (1 Timothy 6:10). It is possible to have money without it having you. And you don't have to be rich to commit this sin of loving money. In fact, some of the people who lust for wealth the most are the ones who are poor. They think if they had more money and what it could buy, they would be happy. The rich know that isn't true.

IT'S GREED THAT ROTTS THE SEED

If our motive for prosperity is not so we can consume the money on ourselves, then the Lord will give us an abundance of finances so we can sow them into His kingdom. If He can get the money through you, He will get it to you. Paul said God gives seed to sowers (2 Corinthians 9:10). This is talking of money. He was saying, "If you will be faithful to give, God will supply you with the money to do it." Therefore, if we are short on seed, it's probably because we are not very good sowers. Sowers have seed; that's God's promise.

Those who say, “I would love to give if I had any extra” are missing the whole spirit of giving. We should live to give, not give to live. Our number one financial priority should be giving. If we could have that attitude from our heart, our finances would be blessed.

I can just hear someone saying, “That will not work. My focus has to be on meeting my needs and then I give out of what is left.” That’s not what Jesus taught. In Matthew 6:33 Jesus said, “But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you.” What things was Jesus talking about? We don’t have to wonder. The answer is right there in the context. Jesus was speaking of our physical needs being met if we would seek first the kingdom of God.

He wasn’t speaking of seeking first the kingdom of God through prayer or a Bible study. He was saying that if our reason for desiring prosperity is so we can advance the kingdom of God, then the Lord will see that all our temporal needs are met. That’s what the context of this verse teaches.

The Lord established a system which enables us to devote our whole heart to Him and His kingdom. We don’t have to departmentalize our lives into the secular and religious. We can make our whole purpose of life to glorify God. In the financial realm, we can make our real heart’s cry, “I want more so that I can give more.” When a person seeks first the kingdom of God in that way, then the Lord personally sees to his needs being met. We don’t have to be concerned with our own needs. And the Lord will take care of us better than we would have taken care of ourselves.

The reason for this is because, “where your treasure is, there will your heart be also” (Matthew 6:21). It would have been wonderful if He had said, “Where your heart is, there will your treasure be also.” But that’s not what He said. That’s the opposite of the way it really is. Our hearts gravitate toward where we place our treasure—not the other way around. Therefore, we have to commit to using our resources for the kingdom first, then our needs will follow.

In verses 22-24, this is explained further by saying that we cannot truly be focused on more than one thing at a time. We cannot be working to meet our needs and working to advance the kingdom of God at the same time. We will gravitate toward one or the other (Matthew 6:22-24).

So, this raises a problem. We have to have our needs met. If that is not to be our focus, then how will we survive? Jesus gives the answer in versus 25-33. The key is that if we will make our primary concern using our finances to advance God’s kingdom, then He will supply all our needs. If we take care of Him, He will take care of us.

Someone may be saying, “What about Hebrews 13:5? It says, ‘ [Let your] conversation [be] without covetousness; [and be] content with such things as ye have; for he hath said, I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee.’ “Doesn’t this verse teach we are supposed to have nothing?” NO! This verse is teaching against covetousness. We should be content with what we have, but as we start living to give, abundance will come our way, and we should be content with that too.

Jesus said in Mark 10:29-30 that any person who gives to Him out of the right motive would receive a hundredfold return **IN THIS LIFE**. That’s a promise. We don’t give to get; but we realize as we give, we will get so we can give even more. And as the money flows through, there will always be plenty for you. The Lord will meet your needs. He is El Shaddai, the All sufficient one—not El Cheapo, the Stingy One.

“Let them shout for joy, and be glad, that favour my righteous cause: yea, let them say continually, Let the LORD be magnified, which hath pleasure in the prosperity of his servant” (Psalms 35:27).

WHAT TO DO WHEN YOUR PRAYERS SEEM UNANSWERED

Andrew Wommack

Today I want to share about what to do when your prayers seem unanswered, and I want to put the emphasis on the fact that your prayers “seem” to be unanswered.” The truth is that God always, always answers any pray that is prayed according to His Word in faith. In 1 John 5:14-15 it says, “And this is the confidence that we have in him, that, if we ask any thing according to his will, he heareth us: And if we know that he hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desired of him.” That is a lot of confidence. God always answers prayer, but it doesn’t always look like it’s answered. Matthew 7:7-8 says, “Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened to you: For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.” Those verses are saying that God does answer prayer. Yet every one of us can think of a time in our lives when we asked for something that we believed was a right thing, a good thing not totally selfish or outside of God’s will, yet we didn’t see the answer.

God’s Word says to ask, and it will be given to you; but our experience says we asked, and it wasn’t given to us. Which is true? The answer may surprise you, but the truth is that probably both are true. Most people think, “Now wait a minute, God’s Word says he will answer, and I didn’t see it happen.” John 4:24 says, “God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth.” God operates in the spiritual realm to answer your prayer, but it takes faith on your part to manifest. Faith is what takes things from the spiritual world and moves them into the physical world. This is basically what Hebrews 11:1 says: “Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.” It didn’t say faith is the evidence of things that don’t exist. They do exist, but they are not in the seen physical world; but in the unseen spiritual realm. Faith reaches over into the spiritual realm and draws those things into the physical world.

It’s like a radio signal. Radio and television stations are broadcasting constantly. You can be in a room where you can’t see or hear the signals, but that doesn’t mean they aren’t there. You have to turn a radio on and tune it to the frequency you want to hear. Then the radio pulls those signals out of a realm you can’t perceive and rebroadcasts them in a realm where you can hear them with your human ear. God answers our prayers in a similar way: He gives things in the spiritual realm, and by faith we have to reach out and bring them into the physical world. The physical and spiritual worlds move parallel to each other. God moves and answers your prayer, but you may never see it manifest in the physical unless you let faith bridge the gap between the unseen spiritual realm and the physical world we live in.

For example, Daniel, a man of God, was praying and asking God to give him a revelation. For the sake of time, I’ll summarize the story. The Lord sent the angel, Gabriel, to appear to Daniel and answer his prayer. Daniel 9:22-23 says, “And he informed me, and talked with me, and said, O Daniel, I am now come forth to give thee skill and understanding. At the beginning of thy supplications the commandment came forth; and I am come to shew thee; for thou art greatly beloved: therefore understand the matter, and consider the vision.” Here is the point: Gabriel said that at the beginning of Daniel’s prayer, the commandment from God came for him to bring the answer. If you read how long it

took to bring the answer, it was about three minutes, a three-minute lag time between God's command and the physical manifestation.

We make a lot of suppositions that if God is really God and something is His will, it just happens like the snap of a finger; but that's not true. In this instance, God gave the command, and it took approximately three minutes for Gabriel to cover that distance. I don't have all the reasons for this, and it's really not essential. The point I'm trying to make is that from the time God gave the command, there was a lag time of approximately three minutes before it was manifest. Now if that was the longest we had to believe for an answer to prayer, most of us could probably hold on, but it's not always that way.

In Daniel 10 we find the same man praying another prayer, and this time it took three weeks for the answer to come. Many people who read this would say, "Why did God answer one of Daniel's prayers in three minutes and the next prayer in three weeks?" Daniel 10:11-12 says, "And he said unto me, O Daniel, a man greatly beloved, understand the words that I speak unto thee, and stand upright: for unto thee am I now sent. And when he had spoken this word unto me, I stood trembling. Then said he unto me, Fear not, Daniel: for from the first day that thou didst set thine heart to understand, and to chasten thyself before thy God, thy words were heard, and I am come for thy words." This shows that God commanded the messenger from the very first day of Daniel's prayer. It took three weeks for that answer to manifest, but God is faithful. Scripture that says He is the same yesterday, today, and forever (Hebrews 13:8).

If you put chapters 9 and 10 together, I believe God answered both prayers instantly. One took three minutes, and the other took three weeks, but God wasn't the variable. Here's the point: God answers our prayers. He does things, but there are a lot of variables that can happen between the time He answers prayers and you see the answers manifest. You have to believe; faith has to reach into the spiritual realm and bring the answer into the physical realm. So faith is one of the critical ingredients.

Also you can see in verse 13 of Daniel chapter 10, "But the prince of the kingdom of Persia withstood me one and twenty days: but, lo, Michael, one of the chief princes, came to help me; and I remained there with the kings of Persia." This isn't talking about a physical person but a demonic hindrance. Satan is another variable in the process. Sometimes God answers our prayers, but Satan hinders them through other people. For instance, if you're believing for finances, God isn't going to give you money personally. He's not going to counterfeit United States currency or any other currency of this world. He's not going to make money, rain it down from heaven, and put it in your pocket. Luke 6:38 says, "Give, and it shall be given unto you; good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over, shall men give unto your bosom." God will move and answer your prayer, but it's going to come through people. Some people are bound by greed, and if they are angry with you or you're doing things to offend them, Satan can hinder the manifestation of your prayer through them. When you're praying, especially for finances, you need to recognize that other people may be a part of your financial miracle, and you may have to pray for them.

To close this lesson, let me tell you a story. A man who had tried to sell his house for two years heard me teach on this. The Lord made an application to his situation and said, "I'm not the one who is going to buy your house. You've been praying over and over asking me to sell your house, but I'm not going to buy it. I'm going to use people. There is a person I've already spoken to about buying your house, but his finances have been hindered." The Lord told the man to intercede for that person. He didn't know

who the person was, so he couldn't do it specifically. What he did was pray in tongues, let the Holy Spirit make intercession for him, and within two days the man came to him, money in hand, and bought his house. At closing, the buyer said, "Two years ago, when you put your house up for sale, I told my wife, 'That is our home, and we're going to have it.' For two years I've been trying to sell my home so I could buy yours." He then said, "The strangest thing happened. Two days ago [which we know, was the day that man started praying] all the hindrances were removed. My house closed, I got the money, and here I am buying your house." God had spoken to this man two years before, but there was a hindrance. It's the same way with you. God always answers your prayers, but they come in the spiritual form. You have to believe to get them to manifest into the physical, and sometimes you have to deal with demonic hindrances that slow them down.

God is faithful. He has never failed to answer any prayer that was based on his Word and prayed in faith. He always gives, but you may not see the manifestation, depending on other variables. I pray this will help you to build your faith and let you know that God always, always answers your prayers. If you ask, you do receive.

WHAT TO DO WHEN YOUR PRAYERS SEEM UNANSWERED (Outline)

1 John 5:14-15 says, “And this is the confidence that we have in him, that, if we ask any thing according to his will, he heareth us: ¹⁵And if we know that he hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desired of him.” God always answers any prayer that is prayed according to His Word in faith.

Matthew 7:7-8 says, “Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you: ⁸For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.”

John 4:24 says, “God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth.” There is a spiritual world and a physical world. They move parallel to each other. God moves in the spiritual realm to answer our prayer, and then it is manifest into the physical realm.

Hebrews 11:1 says, “Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen.” Faith is the bridge that takes things from the spiritual world and moves them into the physical world.

Daniel 10:11 says, “And he said unto me, O Daniel, a man greatly beloved, understand the words that I speak unto thee, and stand upright: for unto thee am I now sent. And when he had spoken this word unto me, I stood trembling.”

Daniel 11:22-23 says, “And with the arms of a flood shall they be overflowed from before him, and shall be broken; yea, also the prince of the covenant. ²³And after the league made with him he shall work deceitfully: for he shall come up, and shall become strong with a small people.” In both prayers Daniel prayed, God answered instantly.

There can be many variables causing a length of time between when God answers our prayer and the time we see them manifest.

1. We have to have faith.
2. Satan can hinder our prayers using other people.

God is faithful. He always answers your prayer. When you ask, you receive.

WHAT TO DO WHEN YOUR PRAYERS SEEM UNANSWERED (Teacher's Guide)

1. A. According to 1 John 5:14, what is our confidence in?

In God, that He will hear us.

- B. According to 1 John 5:15, since God hears us, what is the result?

We shall have our petitions.

2. A. What does Matthew 7:7-8 say?

If we ask, we receive; if we seek, we find; and if we knock, it shall be opened.

- B. Why does it seem as if some of our prayers are not answered?

Because we don't see the results right away.

3. According to John 4:24, what is God and how must people worship Him?

God is a Spirit and must be worshiped in spirit.

NOTE: God operates in the spiritual realm and answers prayers in that realm. To get our answered prayer from the spiritual realm to the physical, it takes faith.

4. According to Hebrews 11:1, what is faith?

The substance of things hoped for.

5. According to Daniel 9:23, when did the command to the angel come forth?

At the beginning of the supplications (prayer).

6. A. According to Daniel 10:12, on what day of Daniel's prayer was the angel sent?

From the first day.

B. According to Daniel 10:13, how long did it take for the angel to bring the answer and why?

Twenty-one days, because "the prince of Persia" (the devil) withstood him (the angel).

NOTE: There are several variables to seeing prayer manifested. One variable is our faith. Another variable is the devil, and still another is other people and their faith. Remember—God always answers prayers that are in agreement with His Word and prayed in faith.

WHAT TO DO WHEN YOUR PRAYERS SEEM TO BE UNANSWERED (Detailed Teacher's Guide)

Note: The following information may be read out loud (a numbered section at a time) with the person(s) being disciplined. After each numbered section is read, pause and ask the question(s) that correspond to the paragraph(s), and then discuss them.

¹We are like a spiritual transformer. Spiritual power has to be converted to physical power just as radio signals have to be converted into frequencies that are audible to our physical ears. You don't hear the actual signal broadcast by the radio station but rather a signal that has been picked up by a receiver and translated into an audible sound. For a person to say there aren't any radio signals where he is, just because he cannot hear them, is not true. They are there but are on a higher frequency than the human ear can hear. They have to be demodulated into a lower frequency that we can hear.

²This is the way our answers to prayer come. God moves in the spirit world and gives us the answer by faith, and we convert it into a physical reality through our actions. However, that does not mean that we produce the answer by our power. It is God who works the miracles, but they come through us. Without Him, we can do nothing, but He has made us joint heirs together with Christ so that He does nothing without us. Ephesians 3:20 says, "Now unto him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us." We have a part to play in receiving from God. Ignorance of this concept is our greatest problem. Now you can understand much more clearly what Mark 11:24 means, which says, "What things so ever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them." Immediately you receive it in your spirit by faith, and it will come to pass in the physical later. It may take one minute, one day, or one year, but you cannot waiver in your belief that God has already answered your prayer. The time that it takes for God's answer to manifest in the physical realm is dependent upon many things, but it is not God who determines those things. God answers immediately. Remember, it says you must believe that you receive when you pray. God isn't asking you to believe something that isn't true. You do receive instantly in your spirit, then it manifests later in the physical realm.

¹ (a) Radio signals need to be converted into what in order for our physical ears to hear? (Frequencies).

(b) Spiritual power needs to be converted into what? The physical.

² (a) Ephesians 3:20 says, God is able to do exceedingly abundantly above all that we ask or think according to what? The power that works in us.

(b) Explain what Mark 11:24 is saying.

³ An example of this is in Daniel 9 and 10. In chapter 9, Daniel prayed a prayer, and while he was still praying, the answer to his prayer came in the form of Gabriel, who gave him “skill and understanding” in the things he desired. That’s a quick answer to prayer! In Verse 23, Gabriel says that God sent him forth at the beginning of Daniel’s prayer. God moved instantly, but it took about three minutes for the answer to appear in the physical realm. In Daniel, chapter 10, he prayed another prayer, and the answer to this prayer took three weeks to manifest. What a difference! Most people ask, “I wonder why God answered that first prayer in three minutes, but the second prayer took three weeks to answer?” Well in Daniel 10:12, we find that God answered the second prayer instantly too. Praise God! The Lord was not the variable. In this case, it was a demonic force, “The prince of the kingdom of Persia,” that had hindered the answer to Daniel’s prayer.

⁴ Whether it is Satan, people’s wills, unbelief, or any other hindrance, it is important that you know that it is not God who is unpredictable (Psalms 102:27, Malachi 3:6). This is a fundamental truth that you must understand before you can do anything to speed up the answer to your prayer. If you pray a prayer in line with God’s Word, God will answer it immediately (1 John 5:14-15, Daniel 9 and 10). If you understand this, then you will be able to release your faith for the answer to your prayer and see it manifest more quickly in the physical realm.

³Who kept Daniel’s prayer from being manifested in the physical realm for 21 days? (Daniel 10:13)

⁴What does 1 John 5:14-15 teach us about prayer?

WHAT TO DO WHEN YOUR PRAYERS SEEM UNANSWERED (Discipleship Questions)

Read 1 John 5:14-15

1. What is our confidence we have in God?
2. What do we have to ask according to?
3. Can we expect the Lord to answer our prayers if it is not according to His will?
4. Write out verse 15.

Causes of unanswered prayer:

Read Isaiah 59:1-2

5. Is the Lord's hand shortened?
6. Is His ear heavy that it cannot hear?

Read Proverbs 1:28-29

7. Verse 29 mentions two conditions that occurred for the Lord to not answer the wicked. List them.
A. _____ B. _____

Read Isaiah 1:15-17

8. In this Old Testament reading, why did God say He would hide His eyes and not hear their prayers?
9. What nine things are you commanded to do in verses 16-17?
A. _____
B. _____
C. _____
D. _____
E. _____
F. _____
G. _____
H. _____
I. _____
10. Are each of these passive or active responses to the Word of God?

Read Zechariah 7:8-13

11. In verses 9-10, you are again commanded to do the things you listed in Isaiah, chapter 1. What was their response to this command in verse 11?
12. How did they make their hearts?

Read James 1:6-7

13. How are we to ask of God?
14. What is one who doubts like?
15. What can a man who doubts expect to receive?
16. What two things characterize a man who doubts?
A. _____ B. _____

17. Read James 4:2-4

“ You _____ and do not have. You _____ and _____ and cannot obtain. You _____ and _____. Yet you do not _____ because you do not _____.”

18. _____.”
19. Why is it that when you ask, you do not receive?
20. What is friendship with the world?

Read Acts 8:20-23

21. Can you buy your way into the things of God?
22. How was Simon not right in the sight of God?
23. What was he to repent from to get right with God?
24. What poisoned his thoughts?
A. _____ B. _____

Read Matthew 26:41

25. What are you commanded to do in order to escape falling into temptation?
A. _____ B. _____
26. What is willing? _____ What is weak? _____

Read Matthew 7:7-8

27. "ASK and it will be
28. SEEK and you will
29. KNOCK and it will be
30. What can we expect from God if we ask?
31. What can we expect from God if we seek Him?
32. What can we expect to happen if we knock?
33. Will God give to you anything less than what He promised?

Read John 16:23-24

34. What will God give to us if we ask for anything in the name of Jesus?
35. Why would God give to us whatever we asked?

Read John 15:7

36. Where must we abide?
37. What must abide in us?
38. With those two conditions present, what is the result if we ask for the things we desire?

Read Psalm 37:3-6

39. List the things that are required of us in order to receive the desires of our hearts.
 - A. _____
 - B. _____
 - C. _____
 - D. _____
 - E. _____
40. What must we do for Him to bring it to pass (verse 5)?
 - A. _____
 - B. _____

Read Psalm 91:14-16

41. What will God do for you when you set your love upon Him?

42. What will He do because you have known His name?
43. What will He do when you call upon Him?
44. What comes first?
 - A. God answering your prayers first and then you trusting Him
 - B. You trusting God and then Him answering your prayers

Read 1 John 3:22

45. Why is it that our prayers would be answered according to this verse?
46. What is His commandment?

Read Isaiah 65:24

47. When will God answer your prayers?
48. When will He hear you?

Read Mark 11:22-24

49. Who are we to have faith in?
50. In what condition do our hearts and minds need to be to see the “mountain be cast into the sea”?
51. When we pray for something and believe we have already received it, what will the end result be?

REPENT
BELIEVE
ASK
RECEIVE

WHAT TO DO WHEN YOUR PRAYERS SEEM UNANSWERED
(Discipleship Answer Key)

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1. If we ask anything according to His will
He hears us | 16. Nothing |
| 2. God's will | 17. A. Double-minded
B. Unstable |
| 3. No | 18. Ask – murder – covet – fight – war – have –
ask |
| 4. And if we know that he hear us, whatsoever
we ask, we know that we have the petitions
that we desired of him. | 19. Because you ask amiss |
| 5. No | 20. Enmity with God |
| 6. No | 21. No |
| 7. Iniquities | 22. His heart was not right |
| 8. A. Hated knowledge B. Did not fear God | 23. Wickedness |
| 9. Their hands are full of blood | 24. A. bitterness
B. bound by iniquity |
| 10. A. Wash your hands
B. Make yourself clean
C. Put away evil
D. Cease from evil
E. Learn to do good
F. Seek Justice
G. Rebuke the oppressor
H. Defend the fatherless
I. Plead for the widow | 25. A. Watch
B. Pray |
| 11. Active | 26. The spirit – The flesh |
| 12. Refused to heed, shrugged shoulders, plugged
their ears | 27. Given to you |
| 13. Like flint (hard) | 28. Find |
| 14. In faith without doubting | 29. Opened to you |
| 15. A wave of the sea, driven and tossed by wind | 30. We will receive |
| | 31. We will find Him |
| | 32. He will open the door |
| | 33. No |
| | 34. Whatever we ask |

35. That our joy may be full
36. In Christ
37. His Word
38. It shall be done
39. A. Trust
B. Do good
C. Dwell
D. Feed
E. Delight
40. A. Commit
B. Trust
41. Deliver me
42. Set me on high
43. Answer me
44. B. You Trusting God
45. We have kept His commandments and done
what is pleasing things in His sight
46. To believe in Jesus and love our neighbor
47. Before I call
48. While I am still speaking
49. God
50. Without doubt
51. We will have it

WHAT TO DO WHEN YOUR PRAYERS SEEM UNANSWERED (Additional Information)

All of us have had experiences where it didn't look like our prayers were answered, but is that really what happened? The Bible says in Matthew 7:7, "Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you." Is that true? Well, many people say it couldn't mean what it appears to say, because they can cite experiences when they asked for something and didn't receive it. But you have to make the decision stated in Romans 3:4 to "let God be true, but every man [or in this case, every circumstance] a liar." God's Word is true. . .not our experiences.

This is one of the reasons so much doctrinal division has come about. The Word is clear in its doctrine, but when someone tries the Word and doesn't see the promised results, rather than admit that they failed, they say something like "that must have passed away with the apostles" or "it must not have been God's will," etc. God is not the one who failed to answer, but rather we are the ones who have failed to receive.

What actually happens when we ask in prayer is that God moves immediately and gives us the answer in our spirits. We are responsible for believing that answer and acting accordingly to bring the answer into the physical world. God is a Spirit (John 4:24), and He always supplies the answer to our spirit man. Through faith we then give physical substance (Hebrews 11:1) to what God has done.

We are like a spiritual transformers. Spiritual power has to be converted to physical power just as radio signals have to be converted into frequencies, audible to our physical ears. You don't hear the actual signal broadcast by the radio station but rather a signal that has been picked up by a receiver and translated into an audible sound. For a person to say that there aren't any radio signals where he is just because he cannot hear them is not true. They are there, but they are on a higher frequency than the human ear can hear.

This is the way our answers to prayer come. God moves in the spirit realm and gives us our answers by faith, and we convert them into a physical reality through our actions. That is not to say that we are the one who produce the answer by our own power; it is God who works the miracles, but they do come through us. Without Him we can do nothing, but He has made us joint heirs together with Christ so that He does nothing without us. Ephesians 3:20 says, "Now unto him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us." We have a part to play in receiving from God. Ignorance of this truth has been our greatest problem.

Now you can understand much more clearly what Mark 11:24 means: “What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them.” You receive in your spirit by faith immediately, and it shall come to pass in the physical later. It may be one minute, one day, or one year, but you cannot waiver in your belief that God has already answered your prayer. The time that it takes for God’s answer to manifest those things in the physical is dependent upon many things, but it is not God who determines that. God answers immediately. Remember, it says you must believe that you receive when you pray. God isn’t asking you to believe something that isn’t true. You do receive instantly in your spirit; then it is manifests in the physical realm later.

An example of this is in Daniel 9 and 10. In chapter 9 Daniel prayed a prayer, and while he was still praying, his answer to prayer came in the form of Gabriel, who gave him “skill and understanding” in the thing he desired. That’s a quick answer to prayer, but in verse 23, Gabriel says that God sent him forth at the beginning of Daniel’s prayer. God moved instantly, but it took about three minutes for the answer to appear in the physical realm. In Daniel, chapter 10, he prayed another prayer, and his answer to this prayer took three weeks to manifest. What a difference!

Most people would say, “I wonder why God answered that first prayer in three minutes and the second prayer took three weeks?” But in Daniel 10:12, we find that God answered the second prayer instantly too. Praise God! The Lord was not the variable. In this case it was a demonic force, “the prince of the kingdom of Persia,” that hindered the answer to Daniel’s prayer.

Whether it is Satan, people’s wills, unbelief, or any other hindrances, it’s important that you know that it’s not God who is unpredictable (Psalm 102:27, Malachi 3:6). This is a fundamental truth that you must understand before you can do anything to speed up the answer to your prayer. If you pray a prayer in line with God’s Word, God will answer it immediately (1 John 5:14-15, Daniel 9 and 10). If you understand this, then you will be able to release your faith for the answer to your prayer and see it manifest more quickly in the physical realm.